

It's a Young Earth After All

Scientific & Doctrinal Revelations on Geological Layers,
Radiometric Dating, Dinosaurs, Noah's Global Flood, &
The Cosmos

(Restoring the Creation Vol. 3)



R. Nathan Richardson

“In the days of Noah, God destroyed the world by a flood, and He has promised to destroy it by fire in the last days...” - Joseph Smith

“The earth, the Lord says, abides its creation; it has been baptized with water, and will, in the future, be baptized with fire and the Holy Ghost, to be prepared to go back into the celestial presence of God.” -Brigham Young

“Latter-day saints do seek knowledge. We strongly advocate study, research, and education; but we cannot agree with misguided conclusions that defy the scriptures...” -Mark E. Peterson

Cover Image: (Charles Willson Peale 1819, Public domain, via Wikimedia Commons)

Updated 9.2.26

This work is copyrighted and can be shared with attribution for educational purposes (CC BY SA 4.0).

Visit RichardsonStudies.com for a free sharable eBook of this work.

Paperbacks are available on Amazon.

Contact RichardsonStudies@protonmail.com



Restoring the Creation Series

Vol. 1 Doubt, Dogma, & Danger

Evolution Theory as a Threat to Church, School, & State

Vol. 2 Man Has Always Been Man

Revelations on Biological Similarities, Genetics, Adaptations,
the Ape-Man Hoax, Adam, Eden, & The Fall

Vol. 3 It's a Young Earth After All

Revelations on Geological Layers, Radiometric Dating, Dinosaurs, Noah's
Global Flood, & The Cosmos

Condensed Earlier Version of Entire Series

Who Needs Evolution When You've Got the Restoration?
An Inspired Approach to Science & Religion

Occasionally in this book, as a way of pointing out common claims of evolutionists, I will refer to the 2023 book, “Let’s Talk About Science and Religion” by Jensen & Bybee. I’ll refer to this book as “LTSR” and reference quotations from it.

“Upon hearing such carping insolence, my zeal could not be contained... I decided to appear openly in the theater of the world as a witness of the sober truth.” (Galileo Galilei, Dialogue)

Color code:

- **Red** – Scriptures.
- **Blue** – Latter-day Prophets
- **Green** – Scientists.
- **Brown** – Quotes from the BYU evolutionist book “Let’s Talk about Science & Religion” (LTSR) by Jamie Jensen & Seth Bybee. Related quotes from BYU evolutionists will also be in brown.
- **Purple** – When I’m highlighting writings of others and add commentary of my own, I do so in a separate paragraph, and in purple, formatted with “*Note: ... End note.*”



Acknowledgments

Special thanks to Jeremy Michel for prodding me to take on the project of responding to the evolutionist book “Let’s Talk about Science and Religion.”



(Nate & Jeremy Africa in Africa on the quest for the Mokele Mbembe dinosaur.)

Special thanks to Brenda High, Glen Nichols, Utahna, & Shannon Salisbury for help editing.

Special thanks to Dr. Robert Wright (afloodofhope.com) for contributing several essays to this book. Dr. Bob’s faithful research incorporates many truths to, as he says, break the wall between science and religion. Bob was a Nuclear Engineer on submarines in the US Navy. He received his Master’s Degree in Theology and his Ph.D. in Biblical Studies. His area of study was the synthesis of faith and science, using the Biblical Flood as a model. He is the author of numerous books including *A Flood of Hope: It’s OK to Believe* and *Satan’s War with God*. With his wife Carol, he is the founder of The Learning Institute Foundation and The Flood Museum. See his website AFloodOfHope.com. As Dr. Bob says, “God didn’t have to tell us how He created, yet in loving condescension He did—both in Genesis and through the prophets.”



(Nate & Dr. Bob at the 2026 Book of Mormon Evidence conference.)

Special thanks for research of Vince Newmeyer, Dean Sessions, Russ Barlow, Dennis Isaacson, Owen Ira Terry, Jeremy Michel, David Barker, Lance Weaver.

Special thanks to Dr. Kent Hovind and his legendary creation seminars which helped me begin to find my way in the dark, and which showed me how to boldly stand for truth. I’ve enjoyed meeting and working with this hero.



(Nate with the legendary Dr. Kent Hovind at Dinosaur Adventure Land in Alabama.)

Special thanks to Dean Sessions, author of Universal Model: A New Millennial Science, for pushing me forward in creationist studies, and providing many brilliant resources.



(Nate sharing findings from Universal Model science research, and with author Dean Sessions.)

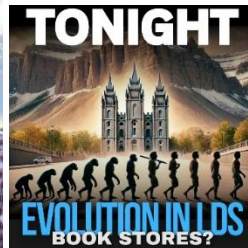
A few I haven't worked with directly but have learned a lot from such as Vance Ferrel, Henry Morris, Stephen Meyer, Michael Behe, Phillip Johnson, and a whole multitude of witnesses in the creationism movement who continue to daily publish tremendous evidences of the Biblical creation and who expose the frauds of evolution science.

Special thanks on religion/church history research to Ezra Taft Benson, James Stoddard, Daniel Burdett, Clark Peterson, Rodney Turner, and Dennis Isaacson. Special thanks to Joseph Fielding Smith and his 1954 landmark book, 'Man: His Origin and Destiny'. The original publication of this book in 2024 commemorates the 70th anniversary of that timeless treasure.

Special thanks to my kids for some fun meme ideas, their prayers for this work, and their encouraging smiles. Most of all, special thanks to my wife for enabling me to spend time on this intensive project, and her intelligent suggestions for this work.



(Some teachers at the May 2026 Divine Design Utah Creation Science Conference. Left to right: Rod Meldrum, Russ Barlow, Jeremy Michel, Dean Sessions, Boyd Tuttle, Nate Richardson.)



ABBREVIATED CONTENTS

Part 1: Introduction to the Age of the Earth: It's a Young Earth After All

Part 2: Radiometric Dating Issues

Part 3: Noah's Global Flood as Key to Mass Fossilization & Proof of Young Earth

Part 4: Dinosaurs: Not so Old After All

Part 5: The Fabricated Geologic Column

Part 6: Cosmic Evolution Issues: Big Bang, Planets, & Pre-Biotic Speculation



Contents

PART 1: INTRODUCTION TO THE AGE OF EARTH: IT'S A YOUNG WORLD AFTER ALL	14
Scripture Got Creation Order Wrong?.....	14
7000 Temporal Years of Earth	18
7 Days of Creation.....	20
Possibility of 1 Day of Creation as 1000 Years	23
When is a Day Really a Day? (Examining Various Theories, Favoring 6 Normal Days of Creation) by Dr. Robert Wright	25
Debunking The Theory of Old Earth Repeated Creations.....	37
Dr. Kent Hovind Creation Seminar 1: Age of the Earth – Highlights & Commentary	40
Earth is Alive: Scriptures	50
Earth is Alive: Quotes.....	52
Element Has Intelligence: Scriptures.....	55
Element Has Intelligence: Quotes	57
PART 2: RADIOMETRIC DATING	58
Radiometric Ages of the Old Earth?.....	58
Henry Morris Scientific Creationism: Ch. 6 Old or Young: How to Date a Rock: Highlights & Commentary.....	63
A Failed Clock in the Flooded World: On Radiometric Dating by Dr. Robert Wright.....	68
How Tree Rings Support the Biblical Account of the Global Flood: On Dendrochronology by Dr. Robert Wright	75
PART 3: THE GLOBAL FLOOD OF NOAH: MASS FOSSILIZATION & KEY TO AGE OF EARTH	80
Why does a global flood matter?.....	80
Worldwide Flood of Noah: Doctrines	81
Global Flood: Evidence: Analysis of Cultural Stories, William T. Pelletier, Ph. D.....	88

Global Flood: Evidence: Table of Nations, Bill Cooper etc.....	89
Dr. Dan Biddle on Noah’s Flood vs Evolution for Fossils on Genesis Apologetics 46m - Highlights.....	91
Is Genesis History? Documentary Highlights: Geology (of the Flood).....	94
Ark in the Darkness Documentary: Highlights & Commentary	99
Scientist Proves Noah's Flood by Dr. Carl Werner on Genesis Apologetics - Highlights.....	105
Dr. Kent Hovind Creation Seminar 6: The Hovind Flood Theory – Highlights & Commentary.....	106
Remembering the Flood: The Accurate Record of Genesis and the Echoes in Gilgamesh (Issues of Applying Evolutionary Principles to Anthropology, Similarities, & Differences) by Dr. Robert Wright	121
Adaptation After the Flood by Dr. Robert Wright	126
Evaluating the "Silurian Hypothesis" (Speculations about Ancients but No Biblical History Allowed, Geological “Erasure”, Flood Record, etc.) by Dr. Robert Wright.....	137
PART 4: DINOSAURS: NOT SO OLD AFTER ALL	142
Dinosaur Soft Tissue by Dr. Robert Wright	142
The Astonishing Preservation of Dinosaur Soft Tissue: Evidence of a Recent Flood Catastrophe (Extended Essay) by Dr. Robert Wright	146
Soft Tissue in a 452-Million-Year-Old Crinoid Fossil? By Dr. Robert Wright	159
Dr. Dan Biddle on Recent Dinosaurs, "PhD PROVES Dinosaurs Lived Recently" on Genesis Apologetics 21m – Highlights on Soft Dinosaur Tissue & Dino Graveyard.....	162
Transitional Fossils? Archeopteryx?	164
About Archeopteryx with Dr Haynes on Institute for Creation Research - Highlights	165

Joel Paleoart with Answers in Genesis on What Dinosaurs Really Looked Like & Birds Aren't Dinosaurs	166
Agendas in a New Dinosaur Series on Netflix, Pointed out by Answers in Genesis and Joel Paleoart - Highlights & Commentary	167
Dragons or Dinosaurs? Creation or Evolution? By Darek Isaacs – Documentary Highlights & Commentary	168
Dr. Kent Hovind Creation Seminar 3: Dinosaurs & The Bible – Highlights & Commentary	172
PART 5: THE FABRICATED GEOLOGIC COLUMN	185
Insisting on a Common Ancestor: Geology's Column	185
Darwin's Doubt by Stephen Meyer, on the Fossil Record & Cambrian Explosion – Book Highlights & Commentary	193
Henry Morris Scientific Creationism Ch. 5 Uniformism or Catastrophism? (On Geologic Column Layer Issues) Highlights & Commentary	205
PART 6: COSMIC EVOLUTION ISSUES: BIG BANG, PLANETS, PRE-BIOTIC SPECULATION	207
Cosmic Change at the Fall of Adam: Excerpt from Dr. Robert Wright	207
Ongoing Creation (On Big Bang & Cosmic Origins)	209
Did The Big Bang Actually Happen? (No) By Dr. Robert Wright	211
The Illusion of Accelerating Expansion by Dr. Robert Wright	213
God “Stretched Out the Heavens” (Biblical Truth Resolves Redshift, Declining Light Speed, & Apparent Age of Universe) by Dr. Robert Wright	219
Highlights & Commentary on Is Genesis History?: Astronomy Section	225
Story of Everything: Documentary by Steven Meyer, On Apparent Meaning in Nature – Highlights & Commentary	226
Darwin on Trial by Phillip Johnson: Ch. 8 Pre-biological Evolution – Highlights & Commentary	232

The Invisible Power Sustaining Creation (on Zero Point Energy) by Dr. Robert Wright	234
The Moon: A Faithful Witness in the Heavens by Dr. Robert Wright	238
Ancient Calendar Keeping by Dr. Robert Wright.....	243
A Pre-Flood Earth without Axial Tilt? By Dr. Robert Wright	247

PART 1: INTRODUCTION TO THE AGE OF EARTH: IT'S A YOUNG WORLD AFTER ALL

It's a young Earth after all!



Scripture Got Creation Order Wrong?

On page 57 LTSR authors cast doubt on the “day-age creationism” model by claiming that “potential issues of compatibility [with evolution] only arise if one stipulates that the creative periods had to occur in the exact order described...” Described where? In Genesis Moses Abraham and the temple. In plain English, that means, ‘**evolution works great so long as you totally disregard everything the scriptures and the restoration have said about how the creation happened.**’ Does this mean we can’t really accept the scriptural accounts of creation because they give the completely wrong order of events in which things were created? Perhaps scriptures should be demoted from truth to meaningful stories? Why would God show up to prophets and tell them the order of how He created completely backwards? What a joke!

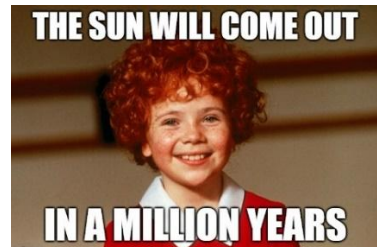
All the orders of events presented in the scriptures for the creation are almost completely the opposite of the proposed order of creations in evolution theory. The Devil must be laughing about how he has convinced almost everyone that creation happened in exactly the opposite order of the scripture. The world of science laughs at the Bible because it is the opposite of their theory. At some point, we really must pick a side.



Evolution is the opposite of the bible!

BIBLE:	EVOLUTION:
Earth before sun & stars.	Sun & stars before Earth.
Oceans before land.	Land before ocean
Light before sun.	Sun before light.
Land plants before marine life.	Marine life before plants.
Fruit trees before fish.	Fish before fruit trees.
Fish before insects.	Insects before fish.
Plants before sun.	Sun before plants.
Birds before reptiles.	Reptiles before birds.
Man brought death into the world.	Death brought man into the world.
God made man.	Man made God.

(Genesis 1)



SUN NOT ON DAY 4 OF CREATION AS SCRIPTURE SAYS?

Here is a terrific case in point demonstrating their bias against scripture when it contradicts mainstream science theories.

On page 20 LTR points out that the scriptural account gives us plants before the sun. In their narrow views, they see no possibility of this. There are many ways this could work. They assume that the source of light for these plants had to be the sun. This is a strange hill for them to die on because the scripture says in the future, the sun won't be the earth's light source.

Take a look at **Revelation 22:5**: “And there shall be no night there; and they need no candle, **neither light of the sun; for the Lord God giveth them light**: and they shall reign for ever and ever.”

So, it shouldn't be hard to understand that the earth had a different light source in its beginning.

Even my kids know this. In science class, they grew plants without sunlight using an alternative source of light. When I talked to my kids about scientists rejecting this scripture due to their limited understanding, they said, “Grown-ups are silly. They make things complicated. Why don't they just believe God?” That is a good question indeed. A great glory of the gospel is that truth doesn't demand we leave behind childlike faith; it requires it.

There are some other possibilities for the sun being on day four. If it turns out that the sun existed before Earth and somehow only became visible on day 4, so be it. But I point out the very plausible possibility of the sun being made later, or the earth being brought to its current location on day four, etc., to show we don't need to dismiss scripture when it doesn't align with science theories.

GOD KNOWS BEST

We are under covenant to accept canonized scripture as God's revealed word and will. It is no light matter to openly advocate messages that directly contradict God's word. There is no need to guess and speculate about the truth when it is plainly revealed.



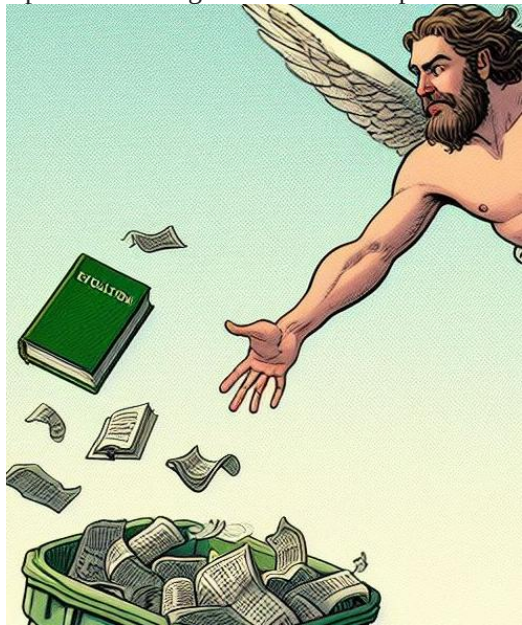
When **Joseph Fielding Smith** encountered people who refused to take the scriptures literally due to some supposed scientific issue, he responded as follows: "[One] took me to task for my remarks and said: "Why, do you not know that if the earth slowed up for part of a day that it would create such a

terrific wind that everything on the face of the earth would be swept off?" I looked at him and with a smile said: "My goodness! Is it not too bad that the Lord would not know this?" The conversation ended. Then I thought of the scripture where it is written that before the great day of the coming of the Lord the earth would "reel to and fro as a drunkard," (Isa. 29:20; D&C 45:48, 49:23) and what then, would be the nature of the wind." (Joseph Fielding Smith, *Man: His Origin & Destiny*, Introduction)

Why are evolutionists in the church so quick to dismiss the word of God in favor of their pet theories? Why do evolutionists contemplate possibilities that have been overruled by the scriptures? We might as well contemplate a theory that someone other than Christ is the redeemer, or that the 10 commandments were reported incorrectly and should do precisely the opposite.

It is common among secular Christians to trivialize, spiritualize, and take away the literal meaning of scripture. They belittle the reality of scriptural authors, times, and doctrines.

Why have evolutionists gone out of their way to complicate the creation? Why have they made it so difficult for people to believe the scriptures? If we are to accept a complicated version of scripture rather than the plain meaning, then the foundations of our faith are shaken, and long-held truths are questioned. The restoration is about getting back plain and precious truths; God is,, in essence,, saying, 'ok, the Bible isn't working out for you guys; here's The Book of Mormon; there's no way you misinterpret this one.'

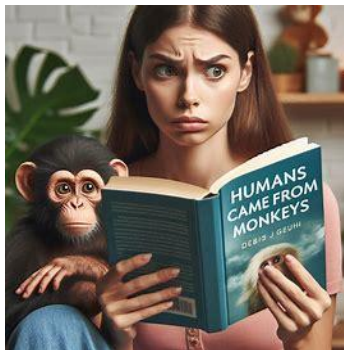


Jacob 4:8-10 warns us against telling God how earth was created: **“8 Behold, great and marvelous are the works of the Lord. How unsearchable are the depths of the mysteries of him; and it is impossible that man should find out all his ways. And no man knoweth of his ways save it be revealed unto him; wherefore, brethren, despise not the revelations of God. 9** For behold, by

the power of his word man came upon the face of the earth, which earth was created by the power of his word. Wherefore, if God being able to speak and the world was, and to speak and man was created, O then, why not able to command the earth, or the workmanship of his hands upon the face of it, according to his will and pleasure? 10 Wherefore, brethren, seek not to counsel the Lord, but to take counsel from his hand.

Finally, **Joseph F. Smith** admonished us to trust the word over the theories of men, “If members of the Church would **place more confidence in the word** of the Lord, and **less confidence in the theories of men**, they would be better off. I will give you a key for your guidance. Any doctrine, whether it comes in the name of religion, science, philosophy, or whatever it may be, that is in **conflict with the revelations** of the Lord that have been accepted by the Church as coming from the Lord **will fail**. It may appear to be very plausible; it may be put before you in such a way that you cannot answer it, **it may appear to be established by evidence** that cannot be controverted, but all you need do is bide your time. Time will level all things.”

(Joseph F. Smith, recorded by Joseph Fielding Smith, The Utah Genealogical and Historical Magazine, Oct. 1930, 155)



7000 Temporal Years of Earth

We learn in **D&C 77:6-7, 12** that the earth has a 7000-year temporal existence. This proves that there was no mortal life occurring on earth outside of this window of time.

Here are the verses:

“6 Q. What are we to understand by the book which John saw, which was sealed on the back with seven seals? A. We are to understand that it contains the revealed will, mysteries, and the works of God; the hidden things of his economy concerning this earth during **the seven thousand years of its continuance, or its temporal existence. 7 Q. What are we to understand by**

the seven seals with which it was sealed? A. We are to understand that the first seal contains the things of the first thousand years, and the second also of the second thousand years, and so on until the seventh. 12 Q. What are we to understand by the sounding of the trumpets, mentioned in the 8th chapter of Revelation? A. We are to understand that **as God made the world in six days, and on the seventh day he finished his work, and sanctified it, and also formed man out of the dust of the earth, even so, in the beginning of the seventh thousand years will the Lord God sanctify the earth,** and complete the salvation of man, and judge all things, and shall redeem all things, except that which he hath not put into his power, when he shall have sealed all things, unto the end of all things; and the sounding of the trumpets of the seven angels are the preparing and finishing of his work, **in the beginning of the seventh thousand years—the preparing of the way before the time of his coming.”** (D&C 77:6-7, 12)



So where are we? 6000 years are accomplished. The LDS bible dictionary and other chronologies indicate that Adam lived around 4000 BC, which puts us at 6000 years since Adam now, so there's 1,000 more to go till we get to the full 7000-year temporal lifespan. This last 1000-year period is the millennium.

D&C 77:12-13 teaches that we are currently in the small **preparation window between** the 1st 6000 years and the final 1000 year millennium during which Christ will reign. Again look at verse 12, and this time verse 13 also to pinpoint our position: “...when he shall have sealed all things, **unto the end of all things;** and the sounding of the trumpets of the seven angels are the preparing and finishing of his work, **in the beginning of the seventh thousand years—the preparing of the way before the time of his coming.** 13 Q. When are the things to be accomplished, which are written in the 9th

chapter of Revelation? A. **They are to be accomplished after the opening of the seventh seal, before the coming of Christ.**” (D&C 77:12-13)

Remember that before earth began its temporal lifespan, it was spiritual, just like us (**Moses 3:5; 6:51; Gen. 2:4-6; Abr. 5:5; D&C 29:31-2; 77:2**). Earth goes through the same phases of pre-mortal spirit life, then temporal life. These facts demonstrate that Earth’s temporal lifespan isn’t some metaphysical spiritual non-real timeframe.



7 Days of Creation

The 7 days of creation are one of the foundational doctrines of all of Judeo-Christianity. **Exodus 31:15-17** says “**15 Six days may work be done; but in the seventh is the sabbath of rest, holy to the Lord: whosoever doeth any work in the sabbath day, he shall surely be put to death. 16 Wherefore the children of Israel shall keep the sabbath, to observe the sabbath throughout their generations, for a perpetual covenant. 17 It is a sign between me and the children of Israel for ever: for in six days the Lord made heaven and earth, and on the seventh day he rested, and was refreshed.**”

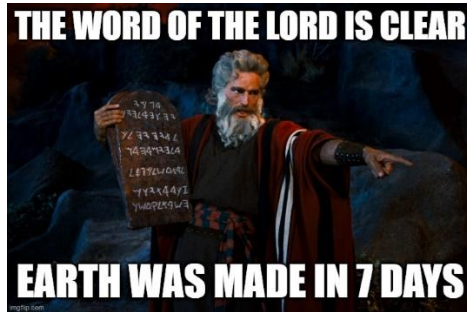
Mosiah13:19: “**19 For in six days the Lord made heaven and earth, and the sea, and all that in them is; wherefore the Lord blessed the sabbath day, and hallowed it.**”

Exodus 20:11: “**11 For in six days the Lord made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the Lord blessed the sabbath day, and hallowed it.**”

This pattern is further extended in the Doctrine and Covenants when the days of creation are compared to the temporal existence of the Earth. **D&C 77:12:** “... as **God made the world in six days, and on the seventh day he finished**

his work, and sanctified it, and also formed man out of the dust of the earth, even so, in the beginning of **the seventh thousand years** will the Lord God sanctify the earth, and complete the salvation of man ...”

Surely the 7 days of creation aren’t an allegorical platitude, but are a key to correct theology, whether those days are the length of our time, or Gods time.



Abraham 4:23 makes an interesting case for a single calendar day being what is meant by days of creation, describing each creation day as morning until evening: “**And it came to pass that it was from evening until morning that they called night; and it came to pass that it was from morning until evening that they called day; and it was the fifth time.**” Note that these days could have been based on our time, or God’s time, whose day is 1000 years to us.



Notice also how the days of creation are in a certain order, and that order is the opposite of evolution! This is another point demonstrating that evolution is anti-science, anti-truth, and therefore, anti-Christ.



Evolution is the opposite of the bible!

BIBLE:	EVOLUTION:
Earth before sun & stars.	Sun & stars before Earth.
Oceans before land.	Land before ocean
Light before sun.	Sun before light.
Land plants before marine life.	Marine life before plants.
Fruit trees before fish.	Fish before fruit trees.
Fish before insects.	Insects before fish.
Plants before sun.	Sun before plants.
Birds before reptiles.	Reptiles before birds.
Man brought death into the world.	Death brought man into the world.
God made man.	Man made God.

(Genesis 1)



Possibility of 1 Day of Creation as 1000 Years

While we have many scriptures indicating the days of creation as normal days, there is also a possibility of the days being 1000-year periods. Consider the following:

Scriptures from the New Testament, Pearl of Great Price, and D&C show plainly that 1 day to God is the equivalent of 1000 earth years (**JST 2 Peter 3:8; Facs. 2 Fig. 1; Abr. 3:4-11**). This strongly suggests the possibility that the earth was created over a 6000-year period. So, we have 7000 years of creation, and 7000 years of life on earth before earth is changed into an eternal celestial kingdom. Then Earth goes on forever.

Here is **JST 2 Peter 3:8** demonstrates 1-day equaling 1000 years: *“8 But concerning the coming of the Lord, beloved, I would not have you ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day.”*

Note: The word “as” is used in the above, which could indicate the use of a non-literal parable form of speech being used.

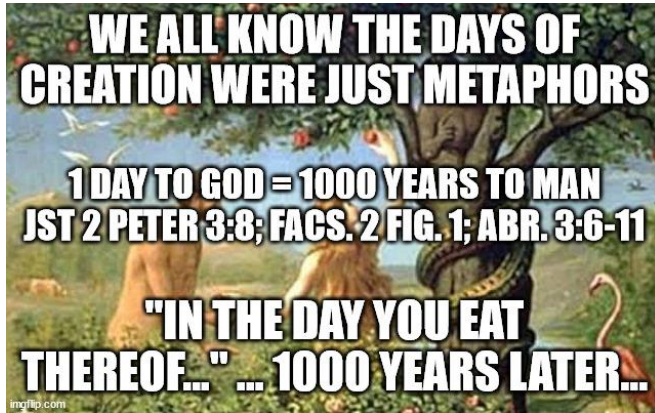
Abraham’s Facsimile 2 Figure 1 telling plainly that God’s time is 1000 of our years for one of his days: *“Fig. 1. Kolob, signifying the first creation, nearest to the celestial, or the residence of God. First in government, the last pertaining to the measurement of time. The measurement according to celestial time, which celestial time signifies one day to a cubit. One day in Kolob is equal to a thousand years according to the measurement of this earth, which is called by the Egyptians Jah-oh-eh.”*

Abraham 3:4-11 shows that time on Kolob has a 1:1000 ratio compared to ours, and that Kolob time is the Lord’s time for creation. Notice the scientific language in this passage, clearly indicating that God’s word was always intended to give us scientific information: *“4 And the Lord said unto me, by the Urim and Thummim, that Kolob was after the manner of the Lord, according to its **times and seasons in the revolutions** thereof; that one revolution was a day unto the Lord, after his manner of reckoning, it being one thousand years according to the time appointed unto that whereon thou standest. This is the reckoning of the Lord’s time, according to the reckoning of Kolob. 5 And the Lord said unto me: The planet which is the lesser light,*

lesser than that which is to rule the day, even the night, is above or greater than that upon which thou standest in point of reckoning, for it **moveth in order** more slow; this is in order because it standeth **above** the earth upon which thou standest, therefore the reckoning of its time is not so many as to its number of **days, and of months, and of years**. 6 And the Lord said unto me: Now, Abraham, these two **facts** exist, behold thine eyes see it; it is given unto thee to **know the times of reckoning, and the set time**, yea, the set time of the earth upon which thou standest, and the set time of the greater light which is set to rule the day, and the set time of the lesser light which is set to rule the night. 7 Now the set time of the lesser light is a longer time as to its reckoning than the reckoning of the time of the earth upon which thou standest. 8 And where these two **facts** exist, there shall be another fact above them, that is, there shall be another planet whose reckoning of time shall be longer still; 9 And thus there shall be the reckoning of the time of one planet above another, until thou come nigh unto Kolob, which Kolob is after the reckoning of the Lord's time; which Kolob is set nigh unto the throne of God, to govern all those planets which belong to the same order as that upon which thou standest. 10 And it is **given unto thee to know** the set time of all the stars that are set to give light, until thou come near unto the throne of God. 11 Thus I, Abraham, talked with the Lord, face to face, as one man talketh with another; and he told me of the **works which his hands had made;**"

Remember that whether the days of creation were 1-24-hour periods or 1,000-year periods, these are very similar compared to evolution's timeline, evolution being wildly long in comparison to both of these options. 7 days vs 7000 years would be about 8 inches apart compared to evolution being 100 miles down the road. So, either view, we could say we are very much on the same page, compared to the absurdity of evolution. 7 days and 7000-year theories both reject natural selection and the concept of a common ancestor of living things. And why the God who turned water into wine and calmed the stormy seas would need billions of years to create the world confounds me!

Also note how **Adam was told he would surely die** the day he partook of the fruit, and he lived to be in the 900s before he died. This is further evidence that God's Day is 1,000 of our years, and the non-symbolic nature of the 1:1,000 ratio. To be fair, Adam also died spiritually the day he ate the fruit, so we also have him experiencing that form of death on the same normal day of creation. But I think it significant that no person has ever lived over 1000 years in mortality (aside from the atypical translated beings like John and the 3 Nephites etc. who can't be said to really be mortal).



The old Earth as published in Lyle's Principles of Geology in 1830 is what set the stage for Darwin's evolution. We have become comfortable with an old earth, and it is an abomination.

When is a Day Really a Day? (Examining Various Theories, Favoring 6 Normal Days of Creation) by Dr. Robert Wright

Dr. Robert Wright is a Latter-day Saint author and owner of the Nauvoo Flood Museum. To learn more, visit afloodofhope.com. See <https://www.afloodofhope.com/post/when-is-a-day-really-a-day>.

When is a Day Really a Day

(Dr. Robert Wright: Dr. Bob, a Latter-day Saint creation advocate, was a Nuclear Engineer on submarines in the US Navy. He received his Master's Degree in Theology and his Ph.D. in Biblical Studies. His area of study was the synthesis of faith and science, using the Biblical Flood as a model. He is the author of numerous books including *A Flood of Hope: It's OK to Believe* and *Satan's War with God*. With his wife Carol, he is the founder of The Learning Institute Foundation and The Flood Museum. See his website AFloodOfHope.com.)

In response to a recent request, this is an excerpt from my book, "What Happened to Hope."

“Thus the heavens and the earth were finished, and all the host of them. And on the seventh day God finished his work that he had done, and he rested on the seventh day from all his work that he had done. So God blessed the seventh day and made it holy, because on it God rested from all his work that he had done in creation.” (Genesis 2:1-3).

As Noah and his family left the ark, they remained in a covenant relationship with God. This included their observance of the Sabbath, established by God at creation.

ANCIENT LENGTH OF WEEK

West Africa: 4 Day Week

Mesopotamia: 7 Day Week

Hebrews: 7 Day Week

Rome: 8 Day Week

Celts: 9 Day Week

Egypt: 10 Day Week

Greece: 10 Day Week

China: 10 Day Week

Mesoamerica: 13 Day Week

After the confusion of the languages at Babel, ideas were confused as well and many of the people-groups lost concepts, technologies and ideas, while retaining others. Some of these groups lost ideas about timekeeping (and the associated covenant-keeping). This basic concept is useful when tracing ancient people: Hebrews in the Old World, and in the New World. When we consider the length of a week in ancient cultures, we are also observing their proximity to His people and the condition of their relationship with God.

The word "week" comes from the Old English word *wice*, meaning "a series of seven days." The Hebrew word for "week" is שבוע (pronounced *shavua*). It is derived from the word *sheva* (שבע), meaning "seven." Except for Shabbat, the Hebrew weekdays are named after their order. *Rishon* literally means

“first”, *Sheni* means “second”, *Shlishi* means “third” and so on. However, the Hebrew word שבת (*Shabbat*) means “stopped working” or “rested”. God created the world in six days and rested on the seventh day. He commanded his people to rest on the seventh day. This is an important indicator in cultural anthropology.

When Noah’s descendants began to migrate south and west towards what became Mesopotamia, the “fertile crescent,” they took the Sabbath with them. It is no surprise then to see modern anthropologists place the origin of the seven-day week in Mesopotamia, at the beginning of human re-civilization after the flood. The reality of a covenant-keeping seven-day week begins at an understanding of God’s intention when he said “day.” Just as the concept of a week reveals a deeper covenantal understanding, so it is with the foundational “day” of creation.

While the geological evidence appears compelling to anyone who would review it absent an atheistic bias, the desire of many Christians to reconcile themselves with theories of evolution, millions and billions of years, and other ideas on origins cause them to question one foundational biblical concept. Did God mean really mean day, when he said *yôm*? The use of the term *yôm* in Genesis to describe the creative periods is fundamental to understanding God’s role as creator, and the power of the atonement offered by His Son. The reinterpretation of this term, while perhaps well-intentioned, has significant repercussions. This foundational concept has significant impact on any discussion on biblical authority. A thorough understanding of the use of *yôm* as well as a review of the competing views on its interpretation and use, are important concepts for any Christian.

In understanding differing world views which originate from alternate interpretations of the term “*yôm*” in the biblical account of creation, it is important to review the position of those who propose or most vocally defend alternate views. These include Progressive Creation/Day Age and the Gap Theory. All rely on unique linguistic interpretations of the same scripture, Genesis 1, to support their theories.

The Gap Theory

The Gap Theory, a precursor in many ways to Progressive Creation, proposes that between Genesis 1:1 and Genesis 1:2 there is a gap of some period of time.^[1] Into this gap, those who support this theory place the existence of dinosaurs, and the deposition of layers of sediment that cover them. It also

suggests that a pre-Adam race of men occupied the earth, and that their destruction was the result of Satan's influence. This theory also suggests that the world was then destroyed by a flood sent by God to destroy this earlier "creation", and when God moved into the creation of verse 2, he was "recreating" the earth, using an unlikely interpretation of the term "*bara*" used in Genesis 1:1 as justification. This allows the billions/millions of years of supposed geological evidence to be reconciled with the Biblical account. This theory proposes that all life prior to the flood (and the fossils they left behind) should be considered genetically unrelated to life today.^[2] This theory gained some level of credibility and notoriety when it was included in the reference notes for the book of Genesis in the 1917 *Scofield Reference Bible*.

There is no geological evidence for the events described in the Gap theory, which would require two great flood events. In addition, the entire theory hangs on Hebrew word usage (exegesis), and the meaning of the language recorded by Moses. The ideas proposed by the Gap Theory proponents are not supported by word usage elsewhere in Genesis, or elsewhere in the Bible.

There is no gap supported by the use of the term *bara*, the word translated as "create," in Genesis 1. The *qal* stem of the verb *bara* is used exclusively in the Old Testament to indicate an activity performed by God.^[3] *Bara* is never applied to an action performed by man anywhere in the Bible.^[4] The Bible teaches that the heavens and earth were in fact created; in other words, matter is not self-existing. In the grammatical form in which *bara* is used (*qal* stem, perfect tense), this word means that God created that which had not previously existed, and that His creative work is a completed action. In other words, creation is *ex nihilo*, "out of nothing". The Apostle John emphasizes this in the beginning of his Gospel account: "All things were made by Him, and without Him nothing was made that was made" (John 1:3). Christ is "before all things" (Colossians 1:17, John 17:5). The Biblical record states that God spoke the universe into being and that God's creative activity has ceased (Genesis 1:3, 6, 9, 11, 14, 20, 24, 26, 29; Psalm 33:6-9, 148:1-5); that He now upholds the created order by His word (Hebrews 1:3); and "by Him all things consist" - literally, "hang together" (Colossians 1:17)

Progressive Creation/Day-Age

Hugh Ross and Gleason Archer are two of the primary proponents of the successor to the Gap Theory, the Progressive Creation/Day-Age interpretation of creation.^[5] Ross places nature on a par with the Bible in terms of authoritative sources for revelation, often referring to nature as the "sixty-seventh book" of the Bible.^[6] This view attempts to reconcile the billions of years required by the geological ages of Charles Lyell. Lyell's uniformitarian

theories provided the framework for Charles Darwin and his theory of evolution. As Darwin put it, he believed that his books “came out of Lyell’s brains.” [\[7\]](#)

While the concepts which form the Progressive Creation/Day-Age theory date back to the 1830’s, it was the American Scientific Affiliation (ASA) and Bernard Ramm who in 1954 formalized the concepts into a form of theistic evolution that today is championed by current Progressive Creation proponents.

Reconciling the Bible with the theories of these scientists is accomplished by utilizing a particular definition for the Hebrew word translated as “day”, *yôm*, in Genesis, Chapter 1. [\[8\]](#) Ross, and others who support this view, apply a meaning to *yôm* that allows it to represent an abstract “long period of time.” [\[9\]](#) In addition, the view incorporates death into the initial creation. In this theory, death is not the result of the Fall but is a part of God’s initial creation. [\[10\]](#)

In combination, these assumptions allow the billions of years proposed by secular scientists to be reconciled with the Biblical account. Progressive Creationism supports scientist’s interpretation of the fossil record. This is an evolutionary interpretation. [\[11\]](#) In Gleason’s case at least there is some attempt to distance this approach from a belief in evolution in the Darwinian sense. Gleason states, “There is no inherent connection between evolution...and the length of time indicated by rock formations, extinct fossils, and radioactive materials.” He then continues however with a less supportive statement, “we can demonstrate that there is no conflict between the explanation of nature revealed in Scripture and the geological evidence of an ancient earth” [\[12\]](#).

Ross proposes that the week of creation has extended over billions of years as well. He claims that the culmination of this creation week, the seventh day, continues today and will not end until the new heaven and new earth begin. [\[13\]](#)

In another attempt to discard the biblical timeline required by a literal interpretation of days in Genesis, Hugh Ross teaches that the Biblical flood did not cover the earth. Rather, the flood was a local event to the Mesopotamian region and the majority of animals in the world were not affected by it. [\[14\]](#) He believes that the geology observed today, and biological diversity present in the world are therefore the result of billions of years of earth history, and not evidence of a global flood. Further evidence, he believes, that the earth was created over billions of years, and not in six literal days as recorded in Genesis.

The heart of these theories is in the interpretation of scripture and the credibility given to extra-Biblical authority. While scientific data can be a compelling testimony to any theory, its evaluation, and the assumptions this evaluation is based upon are critical. In the case of these alternate interpretations, the assumptions begin with science, rather than with the language and truthfulness of the Bible.

The Day is a Thousand-Years Theory

Many believers point to Psalm 90 (and 2 Peter 3:8) as a means to justify additional time to God's creative act. They see Psalm 90 as a math equation: 1 day=1,000 years. If this were true, it would create real chaos with understanding anything in the scriptures relating to time. It also implies that God does not have the ability to communicate accurately. This same reasoning is used to justify millions of years, claiming there is not a good way to communicate such large numbers, so God simply used shorthand in Genesis 1. However, in Revelation, He had no problem communicating through John that two-hundred million soldiers would be involved. Revelation 9:16 says, "The number of mounted troops was twice ten thousand times ten thousand; I heard their number." And in Genesis 24:60, "And they blessed Rebekah, and said unto her, Thou art our sister, be thou the mother of thousands of millions, and let thy seed possess the gate of those which hate them." 1,000 times 1 million = 1 billion. So, if God wanted to express deep time in Genesis he could have, and would have done so clearly.

When God commanded Israel to keep the sabbath, he used the six days of creation as justification, without any ambiguity. To apply the "day is as a thousand-years" model would imply one Sabbath every six thousand years.

When Joseph Smith was studying the Book of Revelation, he had a number of questions. These questions, and the answers the Lord provided are recorded in Doctrine and Covenants Section 77. Joseph said of God's revelations:

"Whenever God gives a vision of an image, or beast, of figure of any kind, He always holds Himself responsible to give a revelation or interpretation of the meaning thereof, otherwise we are not responsible or accountable for our belief in it."[\[15\]](#)

In Verse 12 of Section 77, he asked the Lord about the trumpets in chapter 8 of Revelation, and was told:

"We are to understand that as God made the world in six days, and on the seventh day he finished his work, and sanctified it, and also formed man out of the dust of the earth, even so, in the beginning of the seventh thousand years will the Lord God sanctify the earth, and complete the salvation of man,

and judge all things, and shall redeem all things, except that which he hath not put into his power, when he shall have sealed all things, unto the end of all things; and the sounding of the trumpets of the seven angels are the preparing and finishing of his work, in the beginning of the seventh thousand years—the preparing of the way before the time of his coming.”

Joseph also asked God, “What are we to understand by the book which John saw, which was sealed on the back with seven seals?” God’s answer is recorded in verse 6, “We are to understand that it contains the revealed will, mysteries, and the works of God; the hidden things of his economy concerning this earth during the seven thousand years of its continuance, or its temporal existence.”

These verses tell us that the earth will have a seven-thousand-year existence, and that Christ will come at the beginning of the seventh thousand. This will make a total of seven thousand years of the earth's existence. We are approximately six thousand years into creation, it is important to acknowledge this truth, without ambiguity, or we will not be prepared for Christ’s return.

When Peter made his comment, “that with the Lord one day is as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day,” he was warning about the dangers of those who will deny Christ’s return saying, “Where is the promise of his coming? For ever since the fathers fell asleep, all things are continuing as they were from the beginning of creation.” He was quoting Psalm 90 because it was understood by his listeners to be Moses’ words of encouragement to be patient. His purpose was to encourage the people to be vigilant in awaiting the return of Christ, and to do so, we have to acknowledge His creation and trust His truth of it. He continues, “For they deliberately overlook this fact, that the heavens existed long ago, and the earth was formed out of water and through water by the word of God, and that by means of these the world that then existed was deluged with water and perished. But by the same word the heavens and earth that now exist are stored up for fire, being kept until the day of judgment and destruction of the ungodly.” He warns that those who deny Christ’s return are “scoffing, following their own sinful desires,” but that the “Lord is not slow to fulfill his promise as some count slowness, but is patient toward you, not wishing that any should perish, but that all should reach repentance.”

Psalm 90 offers a profound reflection on the brevity of human life in stark contrast to the eternity of God. It compels readers to “number their days” as a means of gaining wisdom and understanding the fleeting nature of their existence. This psalm does not recount the events of creation; instead, it addresses the human condition, urging us to recognize our mortality in light of God’s infinite power and judgment.

The central theme of Psalm 90 underscores the impermanence of human life against the backdrop of God's everlasting presence. It encourages us to reconsider our earthly pursuits and prioritize spiritual growth over temporal desires. By calling us to "number our days" (Psalm 90:12), the psalm invites a conscious awareness of our limited time on earth, fostering the wisdom needed to lead a truly meaningful life.

In contrast, Genesis 1 presents the majestic narrative of the six days of creation, where God brought forth the heavens, the earth, light, and all living things. This powerful account highlights God's unparalleled creative authority and the establishment of the natural world.

Although both scriptures connect to God, they illuminate different dimensions of faith and truth. Psalm 90 confronts us with the reality of human mortality and the urgent need for spiritual insight, whereas Genesis 1 celebrates God's creative power and the intricate formation of the universe. Together, they offer a holistic view of our relationship with the divine, balancing the truth of our impermanence with the awe of creation.

The Exegesis of “*yôm*”

In the absence of a desire to support an old-earth worldview, what motivation is there for the linguistic calisthenics required to reinterpret the term *yôm* to mean something other than what it says? When the word *yôm* is used in association with either numerical values, or other descriptors (such as evening and morning), it never means anything other than a 24-hour period. In no other instance in the Bible is *yôm* used to describe any other period when the cardinal descriptors are present.^[16] As observed by Jonathan Sarfati, “The two words “evening” and “morning” are combined with *yôm* nineteen times each outside of Genesis 1. Every time, they clearly mean that particular literal part of a 24-hour day, regardless of the literary genre or context.”^[17] To assume anything other in this instance, particularly to satisfy an old-earth theory is not supported.

The “singular *yôm* is ordinarily employed purely for temporal references, retaining the basic meaning day”^[18], which indicates both the “temporality of the occasion and its localization at a certain time.”^[19] As in our current use of the word ‘day’, *yôm* either indicates the space of time marked by the light of the sun, as contrasted with *layla*, night, or the space of time from one evening till the next one. When it is used to imply a quality, or occasion to the day, such as, ‘the day of evil’ (Amos 6:3), or the ‘day of punishment’ (Isaiah 10:3) it does not include the modifiers (temporal, numerical or an association with *layla*, night).

Another important exegetical factor is the association of the word *yôm*, with the Hebrew cardinal term, *echad*. Specifically, this cardinal term, most often translated as “first”, and used in Genesis 1:5 in that context, stands for the ordinal when dealing with a small number of “countable” items, such as the days of creation. Speaking in particular of the sixth day of creation, Andrew Steinmann said, “This would indicate that the sixth day was a regular solar day, but that it was the culminating day of creation.”^[20] Francis Humphrey states this argument concisely, the fact that “the word *yôm* is accompanied by sequential numerical denotation and the language of ‘evening and morning’ gives a *prima facie* case that regular 24-hour days are in view.”^[21] The exegetical case for *yôm* being utilized within the Genesis account as anything other than a 24-hour period is not supported by the text itself. The consistency of its utilization throughout the Bible, requires a single conclusion, Moses was describing a sequence of actual, 24-hour days when he described the creation week.

It is logical to consider the exegetical argument in light of other research on the subject. The fact that Ross chooses to place nature on par with scripture as a source for revelation is not a genuine argument. It can lead to what Paul warned of, “they exchanged the truth about God for a lie and worshiped and served the creature rather than the Creator.”^[22] (Romans 1:24) Because nature cannot of itself communicate ideas or meaning, it must be evaluated. Nature has no immutable meaning, all meaning must be inferred and evaluated through a worldview or set of assumptions that are man-made, and therefore flexible. It is important to ask, “what are the intentions or assumptions being furthered by the specific evaluation?” Ross does not simply give nature a Biblical authority, he gives authority to anti-God geologists and paleontologists who provide the geological interpretation. The data itself, the presence of rock layers, and the fossils they contain tell a different story when God is considered the Creator, than if they are the result of random events. Considering the fallen nature of man, and his diminished intellectual capacity which resulted from that fall, giving authority to man-interpreted natural observations on par with God-revealed scripture is flawed.^[23] Rather than considering the creation as equal with the Creator, when we place His word above the creation in authority, and evaluate the evidence in terms of biblical truth, a science that is directed by eternal truth, rather than flawed, temporary belief reveals itself. This true science embraces views such as *yôm* indicating a discrete 24-hour period, the reality of the biblical flood and God’s direct creation of all living things.

The Impact of Alternate Views

Science that refuses to consider the role of God in creation, his omnipotent power, and its miraculous nature, are *de facto*, anti-God, regardless of who supports them. The attempt to reconcile with anti-God science permeates the views of Progressive Creation and Day-Age theorists. Andrew Kulikovsy writes that theistic evolution is “clearly a theological explanation designed to accommodate Darwinism.”[\[24\]](#) Because evolution is a theory powered by death; Ross proposes that death was a part of God’s initial creation. The acceptance of death before the fall has profound implications. The apostle Paul wrote that “sin came into the world through one man, and death through sin.” (Romans 5:12) This is a foundational Christian belief, because it was through Jesus Christ that “we have now been justified by his blood, much more shall we be saved by him...” (Romans 5:9). Evolution requires death. Survival of the fittest requires death of the weakest. In the absence of death, there can be no theory of evolution, theistic or otherwise. Therefore, an acceptance of the idea of theistic evolution requires an acceptance of pre-Fall death, and a rejection of Christ’s foundational work.

Because the Bible provides a particular chronology and sequence to the events of creation, those who support theistic evolution, in any flavor, must also address the inconsistencies between the two in terms of sequence. In evolutionary theory the first animals evolved in the seas, and then became land animals, and ultimately flying animals (both birds and bats). In Genesis, sea and flying creatures are created on the fifth day, with land animals created on the sixth. God also revealed that He created plants on the land before creating living creatures in the seas.[\[25\]](#) This is also a contradiction to the evolutionary timeline. Simply denying the exegetical meaning of “*yôm*” and reinterpreting the Hebrew words used to describe creation days to accommodate it, as a way of accepting billions of years, does not address the inherent incompatibility between the Biblical account, and these implicitly anti-“God as Creator” theories.

Joseph Fielding Smith wrote “If the Bible does not kill Evolution, Evolution will kill the Bible.” He continued, “There is not and cannot be, any compromise between the Gospel of Jesus Christ and the theories of evolution...It is not possible for a logical mind to hold both Bible teaching and evolutionary teaching at the same time...If you accept [the scriptures] you cannot accept organic evolution.[\[26\]](#)” Any attempt to integrate theories of men, that have by their very nature excluded God and any of His miracles, will always require compromise. That compromise comes with a cost. It is not simply a matter of which theory sounds better, or who can make the better argument. It is a matter of authority.

Accepting the Bible as the Word of God, requires a belief in what it says, even if that may be at odds with the intellectual majority for a time. Through the process of evaluating those who developed and continue to teach against a literal interpretation of the term “*yôm*” to mean an actual, 24-hour day, it has become clear that the accommodations made to reconcile with secular science have relegated God to a spiritual role, and not a physical one. Rather than God being front and center in His creation, He is now relegated to filling in the gaps.

Accepting that “*yôm*” does, in fact mean a 24-hour period, and that the Biblical account is therefore actual, historic fact, places God back at the center of His creation. It also allows us to recognize the beauty of His creation, and the redemption offered by His Son. A redemption that necessarily included conquering the death introduced by the actions of man, the fall. When we understand the role God played as Creator, and the reliability of His account, we are able to appreciate the power of His Son to overcome the corrupting influence sin brought into that creation. We are able to embrace the salvation He offers.

References

- [1] Hugh Ross, *Creation and Time: A Biblical and Scientific Perspective on the Creation-Date Controversy*, Colorado Springs, Colorado: NavPress, 1994, 36.
- [2] John J. Davis, *Paradise to Prison: Studies in Genesis*,. Sheffield Publishing, 1975, 44.
- [3] John Parsons, *Zola’s Introduction to Hebrew*, Zola Levitt Ministries, 2002, 10.2.
- [4] Davis, 1975, 44.
- [5] Gleason L Archer, “A Response to the Trustworthiness of Scripture in Areas Relating to Natural Science,” *Hermeneutics, Inerrancy, and the Bible: [papers from ICBI Summit II]*, ed. Earl D. Radmacher and Robert D. Prues. Grand Rapids, MI: Academie Books, 1986, 331.
- [6] Ross, 1994, 57.
- [7] “Charles Lyell,” Darwin Correspondence Project. *University of Cambridge*..
- [8] Archer, 1986, 327-328.

- [9] Hugh Ross., *A Matter of Days*, Colorado Springs, Colorado: NavPress, 2004, 81–83.
- [10] *ibid.*, 83.
- [11] Ross, 1994, 83.
- [12] Archer, 1986, 332-333.
- [13] Ross, 1994, 59.
- [14] *ibid.*, 73
- [15] *Teachings of the Prophet Joseph Smith*, 291
- [16] Jonathan Sarfati, *Refuting Compromise*, Powder Springs, GA: Creation Book Publishers, 2017, 73-79.
- [17] *ibid.*, 81.
- [18] James Barr, *Language and Meaning: Studies in Hebrew Language and Biblical Exegesis. Papers Read at the Joint British-Dutch Old Testament Conference Held at London*, Brill Academic Publishers, 1974, 129.
- [19] *ibid.*, 129
- [20] A. Steinmann, עֶחָד [echad] as an Ordinal Number and the Meaning of Genesis 1:5, *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 45(4), 2002, 577–584.
- [21] Francis Humphrey, “The Meaning of yôm in Genesis - [creation.Com](http://creation.com).
- [22] Unless otherwise noted, all biblical passages referenced employ the *English Standard Version*
- [23] Terry Mortenson, *Coming to Grips with Genesis: Biblical Authority and the Age of the Earth*, New Leaf Publishing Group, 2008, 129.
- [24] Andrew Kulikovsky, *Creation, Fall, Restoration: A Biblical Theology of Creation*, Mentor, 2009, 118.
- [25] Jonathan Sarfati, “Evolution/long ages contradicts Genesis order of Creation,” *Creation Magazine* 37, no. 3 (July, 2015), 52-54.
- [26] Joseph Fielding Smith (1954). *Man, His Origin and Destiny*.



Debunking The Theory of Old Earth Repeated Creations

Theories mixing evolution and Christianity, particularly the ‘repeated life cycles of Earth’ theory were advocated by Ken Peterson on the Mormon renegade (episode 98:

<https://open.spotify.com/episode/2jHPJBzkqC1YKBGDuc8lmD?si=0DDSrDwSQYO-63Ik76d3MQ>). Peterson of course is a great guy, but here I’ll present my disagreement of his theories.

Peterson drew upon teaching the book “Earth in the beginning” by Eric Skousen. That book has a few good points but lots of falsehoods.

Peterson claims that because Joseph Smith said the words world and Earth are not the same and that because of this distinction there could have been many worlds which came into being and passed away on this same Earth. This is a direct conflict with the doctrine of no death before the fall.

With this view he believes in hominid humans who are part human and part ape. He has failed to learn that neanderthal finds and other hominids are frauds, monkeys, and common pigmies.

He assumes that science has basically correct ages for the earth and the geological time scale and the various extinctions. He assumes that God created and destroyed various quote unquote worlds here as shown by the extinctions.

He trusts the geological time scale numbers, which do not attribute a mass extinction to the flood of Noah, which took place approximately 4,500 years ago. The supposed Cambrian Extinction millions of years ago was the flood of Noah. Who do believers in God trust the timeline setup by the atheist calculations of nature forming without any supernatural influence?

He is apparently unaware that science continually revises its estimates of the Earth's age. Whenever we demonstrate that evolution doesn't work, they make it older.

He is also apparently unaware that the geologic time scale is a mythical creation found only in textbooks and museums. Science does not provide any location that demonstrates the column or even the order the column requires. The column was invented as a way to explain an old Earth, and the old Earth was invented as a means to explain evolutionary creation without the need for God - that's the whole point, that's what evolution and old Earth are all about.

He doesn't understand that dinosaurs (not dragons) lived alongside humans and became extinct during the flood of Noah. He doesn't understand that the flood of Noah is what created all fossils, including those of dinosaurs.

He is correct that we cannot explain life on Earth by natural selection and macroevolution; that clearly God had to place life on Earth. But they are incorrect and assuming that God placed this life on Earth millions and billions of years ago, after the various extinction events.

He makes a claim that because William Phelps stated that Joseph Smith taught that this system has been going on for approximately 2.55 billion years, which is roughly the age of the Earth. This number could apply to an entire galaxy system or a larger system, etc., we don't know what system he was referring to.

Yes, the 2.55 billion years, when translated into God years of the 1000 to 1 ratio, does become 7,000 years, which is a nice round number that appears in the scriptures. But the scriptures referring to the 7000-year temporal life of this Earth are clearly referring to our time. A more plausible theory is that these 7,000 God years, or approximately 2.55 billion years, represent the duration this galaxy system has been in operation under Jehovah's control.



Evidence is mounting that this Earth was created over 7,000 years and has now been inhabited for some 6,000 years, and the final 1,000-year millennium is to be the most glorious. The temporal lifespan of the Earth has always been understood to span from the fall of Adam to the end of the millennium, and the millennium has always been taught to be approximately between 2,000 and 3,000 AD.

Peterson rightly points out that microbiology disproves the phylum tree of life.

Peterson joins with Hugh Nibley in the incorrect belief that pre-Adamite civilizations existed long before Adam.

He also promotes ideas from the Kolob theorem that God's dwelling is the center of the Galaxy. This idea is also promoted by many saints and is a fascinating possibility.

He promotes unproven mainstream scientific philosophies like wormholes, folding of space, dark matter, and dark energy.

He makes a good point that the James Webb telescope showed deep into space where scientists thought the universe began, where there would be different types of incomplete galaxies, but what they saw were more complete galaxies, which demonstrated the scriptural teaching that there is no beginning.

Dr. Kent Hovind Creation Seminar 1: Age of the Earth – Highlights & Commentary

Full lecture: <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=LaHcHwPj4sw>

Satan uses evolution as a false path to exaltation.

Note: Latter-day Saint Commentary: Hovind does not believe in theosis (exaltation, becoming like God) as a doctrine. Latter-day Saints do, but most, including myself, would agree that evolution is Satan's counterfeit to truth. Becoming like God is, in fact, a genuine possibility. The only way to become like Heavenly Father is to follow Jesus, not cheap immoral evolution as Satan claims. End note.

There are different kinds of evolution, and the evolution of one species or 'kind' turning into another has never been observed. They only use examples of small changes within the same species when defending evolution.

The 1st law of thermodynamics says matter cannot be created or destroyed, so you can't have a Big Bang creation.

The material that exploded in the Big Bang kept getting smaller and smaller. About how much stuff exploded until now, they say it was nothing at all that exploded.

We don't know where God came from, but they don't know where the Big Bang came from. These are two different religions of belief.

It's not science versus religion, its two religions and you choose which one to believe. The difference is that the religion of evolution is tax supported, so it has many followers.

Where did the laws of the universe come from, and why aren't they evolving? They can't answer.

Eight moons and two or three planets spin backward; this violates the law of conservation of angular momentum if they all come from an explosion that was spinning quickly.

Some planets have moons going in both directions.

There's an entire galaxy that spins in the wrong direction.

The Bible says the heavens shall pass away with a great noise; in other words the Big Bang is yet future!

Jesus dying on the cross is meaningless according to evolution. God said he was going to restore the Earth to the way it was, but according to evolution, the way it was has always been death. You cannot have theistic evolution!

See the book *The Evolution Cruncher* (get it free from creationism.org).

The second law of thermodynamics states that everything tends towards chaos - this violates evolution. Receiving energy from the sun doesn't overcome this; solar energy destroys things, and only plants use it.

Note: You can't say natural selection overcomes the law of thermodynamics either. End note.

One little plant cell is more complex than a space shuttle.

Whenever a textbook says millions of years ago, that's your warning that a fairy tale is coming next.

The Bible says those who hate God love death. According to evolution, death is the god that gave them life.

Note: Indeed, evolution is all about praising death and vicious competition. It is an apocalyptic theory of doom. It calls for killing the less advanced, undermines God as creator, and its claims are fictional. End note.

Learning evolution, that you are an animal, impacts the way you behave, and this is very much associated with today's crazy death music and behavior.

Nobody knows everything, and for those who claim that there is no God, God could exist in the area of knowledge that they do not have.

Atheists have no basis for deciding what is right and wrong. They just decide for themselves.

Note: This is why so many babies are being killed today by abortion. Secular abortionists say it's just religious to think that it's not ok to kill babies. It is true that human rights are a religious concept; science alone cannot protect you and reveal the most important truths. End note.

The Bible says not to make any cuttings on your skin.

The Bible says do not make any marks on your skin (tattoos).

As far as laws go in the United States, the law is that you cannot require creation science to be taught, but a teacher can teach it if they want to. There's no law prohibiting the teaching of creation science in school. ACLU promotes a falsehood that it is illegal to teach creation in public schools.

Evolution obviously destroys children's faith in the Bible, and Jesus said people who destroy the faith of children are in big trouble.

In the early 1900s school textbooks had hardly any evolution. Then the Russians were beating us in the space race, and people blamed that on Russians teaching more evolution in their schools, so we put lots of evolution into our textbooks at that point. But evolution has nothing to do with placing a satellite in space.

In 1959, on the 100th anniversary of Darwin's book, Eisenhower asked Congress for an additional billion dollars to push evolution in schools, and he got it.

When they put in all the evolution and they took out prayer from schools, that's when every age bracket of immoral sexual activity skyrocketed. 10 to 14 year olds got way more STDs, etc.

Timothy was born of a marriage of a Jew and a Greek, and the Jews were not supposed to marry anyone but Jews. However, Timothy decided to live a good life, and that's how you should react if your parents had you out of wedlock (which, at the time of the making of this lecture, was 1/3 of people; now it's one-half). You don't complain about your life situation; you get up and make something of your life.

Women should dress modestly to help men not commit the sin of lusting after women in their hearts, which sin, of course, leads to bigger sins. Hovind says, "If you're not in business, don't advertise."

Note: I would say don't ever 'advertise' in public; you aren't selling your body. It's a funny joke, but public isn't the place for displaying the body, as I'm sure Hovind agrees. Hovind has a sign at his Dinosaur Adventure Land which includes a park rule that people must dress modestly. Bravo! End note.

Rosie O'Donnell blames the Columbine shooting on not enough gun control despite how they broke over a dozen gun laws. One man made a car tire cover that said, 'Blaming guns for Columbine is like flaming spoons for making Rosie O'Donnell fat.' Bulls have horns so they can tell the Lions to back off and let them eat grass. Same with carrying a gun - you're not out to hurt

anyone, you're just sending the message that you shouldn't be messed with. (This was a note from seminar 4).

When Kent was young, none of the cars were locked, and many of them had rifles hanging in the back window of the car. Back then, no one got shot in school.

Columbine shooters were strong believers in evolution, and they intentionally did the shooting on Hitler's birthday.

Note: Hitler was a leader on evolution and eugenics. End note.

The Columbine shooters broke 18 gun laws yet people responded by saying we need more gun laws. Blaming guns for Columbine is like blaming a spoon for being fat.

Over and over they make the SAT tests dumber so that scores don't look like they're dropping so bad.

National Geographic should be called national pornographic.

Note: It is because the false theories they push are destroying people's spirits minds morals and ultimately bodies. An analogy could be made that pornography poisons people against real love and real connection, similar to how false science poisonous people against the real creator and the real truth, so I agree with Hovind that much blame is to be placed upon this company who shamelessly and militantly promotes evolution. End note.

The **majority of people don't believe in evolution**, even though most scientists do.

The Bible says the life of the flesh is in the blood (Leviticus 17:11). If they had read this, they would have known that bloodletting was bad, and George Washington would not have died as early as he did.

Fossils don't talk, and they don't have a date stamped on them.

There are many ways to date the age of the Earth, and several of those ways give a very young age to the Earth; this is a limiting factor that demonstrates that the Earth is young. This is similar to how if you find money on a sunken ship with the date of 1780, you know the ship came no earlier than 1780 (or else the 1780 coin wouldn't have been made yet). The youngest coin is the limiting factor, like the youngest dates are the limiting factor.

The Bible is clear that 'by man came death,' and that Adam was the 'first man,' that it was the sin of man that brought death into the world, and that Eve was the mother of **all** living. Evolution teaches death before sin, and that is a heresy.

The Bible says that sin came into the world at the time of Adam, and that is when death came into the world. Adam lived around 4000BC based on simple calculations from the bible which all agree on.

BC means before Christ, but textbooks now are saying BCE (before the common era); you see, Christ is gone from the schools.

People wonder who Adam's children married, but an even bigger problem is how evolution made life and how that life found something to marry. In the beginning, men married their sisters; it wasn't until the law of Moses that the rule came not to do that. This was a viable system because there were no genetic defects in the early times.

They think it's hard that all the dogs came from a common dog that was on Noah's Ark, but what's even harder is to believe the **evolutionary theory that all dogs came from a rock!**

Just about every book in the Bible references Genesis and the average person reading the Bible will not find millions of years. The Bible was not made to be so complex that some guru needs to tell us what it means. Genesis is legitimate, Jesus cited it 25 times.

The world is not overcrowded. Six billion people could fit in Jackson, Florida, twice. If evolution were true you would have major overcrowding with that many years of people. Growth population curves take us back to about 4400 years ago, the time of the flood. Scientists recognize a dramatic reduction in population a few thousand years ago; the reality is that at the flood, the population was eight.

God told Adam and Eve to have a bunch of kids, and Satan wants the exact opposite - he wants everyone dead. He's trying to avoid the prophecy that someday, someone will come around and crush his head. It's like when Herod killed babies at the time of Christ.

Many globalists promote the idea of reducing the world's population dramatically. They see human life as a cancer.

The Georgia Guide Stones are a random monument calling for the population to be maintained at under 1 billion. In 12 languages, these 10 commandments

of the New World Order are written in stone.

See the book *Seeds of Deception*, which discusses how GMO crops cause various health problems.

There's a 75,000% increase in autism in Illinois from vaccines.

See Marytoco.com on vaccines.

In Australia, when they made vaccines not mandatory, 50% of the people dropped out, and they had a 50% reduction in SIDS (sudden infant death syndrome).

If the universe were old, there would be way more supernova remnants.

No one has ever seen a star form.

Planets and stars are cooling off very rapidly; it does not take billions of years, as they claim.

Stars in the middle of spiral galaxies spin faster than the ones on the outside, so the spiral should not be there.

A star blows up about every 30 years, and we have only found about 300 supernova remnants. This is evidence of a young creation, only a few thousand years' worth rather than billions of supernova remnants.

Ancient astronomers said Sirius was a red star. Today, it's a white dwarf, so we see it went from a red supergiant to a white dwarf in thousands of years, not billions!

Saturn's rings are expanding quickly and cannot be billions of years old based on their present location.

The **Moon is getting further** from the Earth, meaning it used to be closer - this limits the age of the Earth to about 1.2 billion, which is when the moon would be right next to the Earth, and of course, tides would have been much bigger. (1.2 billion is obviously not the true age of the Earth, but it demonstrates that the Earth cannot be as old as they claim, 4.5 billion.

Note: Now, many scientists are calling for doubling the age to around 28 billion! End note.

Comets are losing material; if they are old, as they claim, it should be gone by now.

Most astronomers say a comet cannot last more than **10,000 years**. They use the Oort Cloud theory, which states that there is a theoretically large number of comets deep in space that we have never observed that replace comets as they die out. The **Oort theory is made to get around this limiting factor of a 10,000-year-old creation!** The Oort cloud is all based on a mathematical mistake.

Evolution is the opposite of the bible!

Evolution theory says the Sun and stars were made before the Earth, but the Bible says the Earth was made before the Sun and stars.

The Bible says oceans before land; evolution says it backward.

The Bible says light before the Sun; evolution says sun before light.

The Bible says land plants first; evolution says marine life first.

The Bible says fruit trees before fish; evolution says fish before fruit trees.

The Bible says fish before insects; evolution claims the opposite.

The Bible says plants before the Sun; evolution claims the opposite.

The Bible says marine mammals before land mammals; evolution says land mammals before marine mammals.

The Bible says birds before reptiles; evolution says the opposite.

The Bible says the atmosphere is between two layers of water; evolution says the atmosphere is above water.

The Bible says man brought death into the world; evolution says the opposite.

The Bible says God created man; evolution says Man created God.

People ask if God could have used evolution to create, and he could have, but that is not the god of the Bible. The **god that would use evolution is cruel, wasteful, and retarded.**

People who consider what God has done are not impressed by what man can do.

The Earth's **magnetic field is weakening** and cannot be more than 25,000 years old. Scientists tried to explain this weakening by **claiming that there are reversals**, but this is not the case.

Note: We repeatedly see how bazar theories without evidence are hatched to prop up evolution theory. End note.

Different parts of the same animal carbon date to be radically different ages.

Dr. Hovind does not like Pangea because oceanic crust connects all the continents under the water. He also points out that most Pangea maps dramatically shrink Africa and delete Mexico.

Note: I believe that Pangea theory has strong evidences. I don't think we even have the same amount of material on the Earth today as existed anciently, so issues with exactly fitting continents together don't automatically disprove Pangea. Further, oceanic crust is very different from continental crust. End note.

The Earth is slowing down, and they add a leap second every year or two. That means it used to be going faster, and if the Earth were billions of years old, it would have been spinning ridiculously fast. Coriolis effect winds would have been 5000 miles an hour. If the dinosaurs lived this long ago, they would have flown off the Earth by centrifugal force.

Desertification shows that the **Sahara desert is only about 4,000** years old, which puts us at flood time. You can't have a desert underwater in the flood. This also begs why we don't have a bigger desert if the Earth is so old.

Note: You could also have the sand deposited by fountains of the deep during the flood, which created the Sahara Desert. The flood's deep waters were hot from the friction of sliding crust, and pressurized from the great water depth (Universal Model Science calls this condition a hypretherm) likely created much of the tiny quartz crystals (sand). End note.

Oil comes up from beneath the surface at 20,000 PSI, and the rock caps above this pressure can only handle that amount of pressure for around 10,000 years or less. The pressure in the well after 10,000 years becomes greater than the pressure of overburdened rocks on the surface.

We now have the technology to make oil in a very short time, about 30 minutes. Oil was created by the burial and pressure of the flood of Noah.

Note: We aren't making oil regularly because drilling is cheaper, but yes, the technology is in place. End note.

Ice core sample rings are assumed to be annual, but they could be shorter. In World War II, some pilots ran out of gas and landed in Greenland; they were called The Lost Squadron. The planes were recovered 48 years later and were 263 ft below the surface in ice. That's **five and a half feet of ice accumulation per year**. The deepest ice we have drilled is around 10,000 feet, and based on a five-and-a-half-foot deposition per year rate, it would only take a little more than a thousand years to get 10,000 feet. Yet they claim the ice rings from that 10,000 ft drill had enough rings to demonstrate some 150,000 years. In the 48 years that those planes were buried, there were **hundreds of ice rings, not 48 rings**. The rings represent periods of warm and cold, not just summer and winter. You can get multiple periods of warm and

cold in one week. One man reported having 15 distinct layers of snow on his car from an 8-hour storm in an Arctic area.

The geologic column does not exist!

Petrified trees are found standing up connecting these rock layers, so they cannot have been deposited millions of years apart from each other. They must have been rapidly deposited in a single event.

It does not take millions of years to petrify; there are many examples of rapid petrification.

A massive Delta New Mexico is reported to have taken 30,000 years for all of the deposit, but this doesn't make much sense when you consider a very old Earth - the whole of Mexico would be covered in deposit. Flood waters could have washed out this deposit in a matter of minutes.

Note: we don't need to use the deposit rate we see currently when we have catastrophic past events. We have never seen events big enough to create some of the alluvial fans that exist; they were formed in the flood. End note.

Tree ring dating is not an exact science; a tree can produce two or three rings a year. Also, there are issues with overlapping tree ring dating charts. The oldest tree is 4,300 years old and if the Earth were much older we should have much older trees.

The Great Barrier Reef in Australia must be less than 4200 years old. They announced this after watching it for 20 years, wondering how fast it would regrow after WWII damage.

Niagara Falls erosion rates show 9900 years old. But if the Earth is as old as they say it is, it should be eroded back much further. The flood could have washed it out in a matter of minutes.

The oceans continue to get saltier. The current salt amount shows around a 5000 year old ocean, and if the Earth was ancient it would be much more salty.

The flood was probably mostly freshwater, and over time, it has gotten saltier. It has been shown that fish can adapt from fresh to salt water over a short time, and when you put those same fish right back in freshwater they die. This is minor adaptation and this is very different from evolutionist claims of rocks turning into animals over time.

Caves:

- 50-inch stalactites formed under the Lincoln Memorial, which took only 40 years to form.
- There's a bat covered in flowstone before it could rot.
- There are cave rock formations growing off of a refrigeration shed, which grew 2 inches in one year.
- One building has massive cave formations from a water leak made in just 40 years.
- A mine in Australia was closed for 55 years; when they reopened it, there were massive cave rock formations.
- They claim 2 inches in a **thousand years** as a maximum creation rate for cave rock formations, but it's more like a max of 2 inches in **one year**.

Erosion and fossils: At the current rate of erosion, the continents will erode flat in 14 million years. Why do they tell us there are fossils **300 times older than that still above sea level**? They should have washed out to sea 300 times.

Language: National Geographic says the oldest writing systems started around 3,000 BC. They say the **oldest languages** are modern **sophisticated** and complete.

Note: My Egyptology class professor said around 4000BC are our oldest records. Remarkable! This matches Biblical chronology. End note.

Calendars: On the Chinese calendar they said the year 2000 was 4700; they may have started their calendar with the flood or the birth of Shem. The Hebrew calendar said the year 2000 was 5760, but a rabbi took out 164 years to try and make it not line up with Jesus to make the Daniel 9:25 prophecy not point to Jesus.

Genealogies: Saxons in England have a genealogy going back to Adam, and the Danes and Norwegians have lists going back to Noah.

Note: I know several people with genealogies that go back to Adam. One is presented in Universal Model Science volume 2. End note.

Don't trust the Egyptian king list; it is greatly exaggerated. The oldest historical records which are reliable are less than 6000 years old.

75% of kids raised in Christian homes who attend public schools reject the Christian faith by their first year of college.

Earth is Alive: Scriptures

Moses 7:48–49, 54-56: 48 And it came to pass that Enoch looked upon the earth; and he heard a voice from the bowels thereof, saying: Wo, wo is me, the mother of men; I am pained, I am weary, because of the wickedness of my children. When shall I rest, and be cleansed from the filthiness which is gone forth out of me? When will my Creator sanctify me, that I may rest, and righteousness for a season abide upon my face?

49 And when Enoch heard the earth mourn, he wept, and cried unto the Lord, saying: O Lord, wilt thou not have compassion upon the earth? Wilt thou not bless the children of Noah?

54 And it came to pass that Enoch cried unto the Lord, saying: When the Son of Man cometh in the flesh, shall the earth rest? I pray thee, show me these things.

55 And the Lord said unto Enoch: Look, and he looked and beheld the Son of Man lifted up on the cross, after the manner of men;

56 And he heard a loud voice; and the heavens were veiled; and all the creations of God mourned; and the earth groaned; and the rocks were rent; and the saints arose, and were crowned at the right hand of the Son of Man, with crowns of glory;

Moses 6:63: 63 And behold, all things have their likeness, and all things are created and made to bear record of me, both things which are temporal, and things which are spiritual; things which are in the heavens above, and things which are on the earth, and things which are in the earth, and things which are under the earth, both above and beneath: all things bear record of me.

D&C 88:25–26: 25 And again, verily I say unto you, the earth abideth the law of a celestial kingdom, for it filleth the measure of its creation, and transgresseth not the law—

26 Wherefore, it shall be sanctified; yea, notwithstanding it shall die, it shall be quickened again, and shall abide the power by which it is quickened, and the righteous shall inherit it.

D&C 88:45–47: 45 The earth rolls upon her wings, and the sun giveth his light by day, and the moon giveth her light by night, and the stars also give

their light, as they roll upon their wings in their glory, in the midst of the power of God.

46 Unto what shall I liken these kingdoms, that ye may understand?

47 Behold, all these are kingdoms, and any man who hath seen any or the least of these hath seen God moving in his majesty and power.

D&C 130:8-9: 8 The place where God resides is a great Urim and Thummim.

9 This earth, in its sanctified and immortal state, will be made like unto crystal and will be a Urim and Thummim to the inhabitants who dwell thereon, whereby all things pertaining to an inferior kingdom, or all kingdoms of a lower order, will be manifest to those who dwell on it; and this earth will be Christ's.

D&C 133:23-25: 23 He shall command the great deep, and it shall be driven back into the north countries, and the islands shall become one land;

24 And the land of Jerusalem and the land of Zion shall be turned back into their own place, and the earth shall be like as it was in the days before it was divided.

25 And the Lord, even the Savior, shall stand in the midst of his people, and shall reign over all flesh.

Romans 8:19–22: 19 For the earnest expectation of the creature waiteth for the manifestation of the sons of God.

20 For the creature was made subject to vanity, not willingly, but by reason of him who hath subjected *the same* in hope,

21 Because the creature itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God.

22 For we know that the whole creation groaneth and travaileth in pain together until now.

D&C 77:6 states that the Earth is going through a “temporal existence” of “7,000 years.”

Matthew 27:50-51: When Jesus was crucified and “yielded up the ghost,” the earth “did quake, and the rocks rent.”

Numbers 16:32: “the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed them up.”

Job 20:27: “the earth shall rise up against [humanity]”

2 Nephi 26:5: “they that kill the prophets, and the saints, the depths of the earth shall swallow them up.”

Isaiah 51:6: “earth shall wax old like a garment, and they that dwell therein shall die in like manner.”

Deut. 4:26, 30:19, 31:28 state that Moses called upon the Earth to witness against wicked Israel.

Isaiah 26:21: “earth also shall disclose her blood”

Earth is Alive: Quotes

Joseph Smith said, “spirit is a substance; that it is material, but that it is more pure, elastic and refined matter” (Joseph Smith, “Try the Spirits,” Times and Seasons 3 (1 April 1842): 745.)

Brigham Young said, “Is there life in a tree when it ceases to put forth leaves? You see it standing upright, and when it ceases to bear leaves and fruit you say it is dead, but that is a mistake. It still has life, but that life operates upon the tree in another way, and continues to operate until it resolves it to the native elements. It is life in another condition that begins to operate upon man, upon animals, upon vegetations, and upon minerals when we see the change termed dissolution. There is life in the material of the fleshly tabernacle, independent of the spirit given of God to undergo this probation. **There is life in all matter**, throughout the vast extent of all the eternities.” (Brigham Young, 23 March 1856, Journal of Discourses, 26 vols. (London and Liverpool: LDS Booksellers Depot, 1854-86), 3:277.)

Orson Pratt said that the earth experienced upheavals that caused the dry land to come forth from the “womb of mighty waters,” and as “it came forth from the ocean floor, like the new-born child, it was innocent.” (Orson Pratt, Journal of Discourses 1:331.)

Heber C. Kimball said, “Some say the earth exists without spirit; I do not

believe any such thing; it has a spirit as much as any body has a spirit.” (Heber C. Kimball, 23 August 1857, Journal of Discourses 5:172.)

Orson Pratt said, “What! is the earth alive too? If it were not, how could the words of our text be fulfilled, where it speaks of the earth's dying? How can that die that has no life?” (Orson Pratt, 25 July 1852, Journal of Discourses 1:281.)

Orson Pratt said, “The earth, like the posterity of Adam, was cursed because of original sin, and like them it will be redeemed unconditionally, and restored again into the presence of God. . . . When one is redeemed, the other is redeemed also.” (Orson Pratt, Journal of Discourses 1:330.)

Brigham Young said, “The curse will be taken from the earth and sin and corruption will be swept from its face.” (Brigham Young, 24 May 1863, Journal of Discourses 10:172.)

Brigham Young said, “During this time the earth and all creation groaned in sin, and enmity increased, and the lives of men and beasts decreased.” (Brigham Young, Manuscript History of Brigham Young, ed. Elden J. Watson (Salt Lake City: Elden J. Watson, 1971), 142.)

Brigham Young said, “The soil, the air, the water are all pure and healthy. Do not suffer them to become polluted with wickedness. Strive to preserve the elements from being contaminated by filthy, wicked conduct and sayings.” (Brigham Young, 10 June 1860, Journal of Discourses 8:79.)

Heber C. Kimball said, “We will let you know that the earth can swallow you up.” (Heber C. Kimball, 8 November 1857, Journal of Discourses 6:35.)

Orson Pratt said that after the saints “have died as the earth will die, they will have to be resurrected, as this earth will be resurrected, and then receive their inheritance upon it.” (Orson Pratt, 25 July 1852, Journal of Discourses 1:293.)

Brigham Young said, “The terra firma on which we walk, and from which we gain our bread, is looking forth for the morning of the resurrection, and will get a resurrection, and be cleansed from the filthiness that has gone forth out of her. This is Bible doctrine. What filthiness has gone forth out of her? You

and I, and all the inhabitants of the earth; the human body, and all earthly bodies, both animal and vegetable; are composed of the native element that we breathe, that we drink, and that we walk upon; we till the earth for our bread, which is one of the 15 materials of which your body is composed, it comes forth from the native elements into an organized state; what for? To be exalted, to get a glorious resurrection. We are of the earth, earthy, and not only will the portion of mother earth which composes these bodies get a resurrection, but the earth itself.” (Brigham Young, 14 August 1853, Journal of Discourses 1:274.)

Orson Pratt said, “Who, in looking upon the earth as it ascends in the scale of the universe, does not desire to keep pace with it, that when it shall be classed its turn, among the dazzling orbs of the blue vault of heaven, shining forth in all the splendors of the celestial glory, he may find himself proportionately advanced in the scale of intellectual and moral excellence?” (Orson Pratt, Journal of Discourses, 1:333.)

Brigham Young said, “Let the people be holy, and the earth under their feet will be holy.” (Brigham Young, 6 April 1852, Journal of Discourses 1:203.)

These next few quotations about the Earth’s baptism teach us both that Earth is a living organism, and vindicates the increasingly popular truth that the Earth was covered in water at the flood of Noah:

Orson Pratt said, “as the earth has been corrupted by other sins than the original, it must partake of the curses of the second death after it is redeemed from the curses of the first, unless God has provided a way for its sanctification and redemption therefrom. It has seemed good unto the great Redeemer to institute ordinances for the cleansing, sanctification, and eternal redemption of the earth, not from the original sin, but from the sins of the posterity of Adam. The first ordinance instituted for the cleansing of the earth, was that of **immersion** in water.” (Orson Pratt, Journal of Discourses 1:331.)

Orson Pratt said that earth’s baptism at the flood was the earth’s “**second birth from the womb of mighty waters**” and as the earth came forth from the ocean it was “clothed with all the innocency of its first creation.” (Orson Pratt, Journal of Discourses 1:331.)

Brigham Young said, “The Lord **baptized the earth** for the remission of sins, and it has been once cleansed from the filthiness that has gone out of it, which was in the inhabitants who dwelt upon its face.” (Brigham Young, 14 August 1853, Journal of Discourses 1:274.)

Joseph Smith said that God who once “cleansed the violence of the earth with a flood,” promised that he would purify the earth “again with fire in the last days.” (Joseph Smith, “Gen. Smith’s Views on the Government and Policy of the U.S.,” Times and Seasons 5 (15 May 1844): 533.)

Orson Pratt said, “As the earth was cleansed from its transgression by **baptism in water**, so it must again be cleansed, before it is made immortal. It must be cleansed by an element that is stronger and more purifying than that of water, namely, the element of fire. Fire must prevail over all the face of this earth. What for? For the purpose of cleansing the earth from its transgressions, the same as the Latter-day Saints expect to be cleansed and purified more fully than by baptism in water—by the baptism of fire and the Holy Ghost.” (Orson Pratt, 1 August 1880, Journal of Discourses 21:324.)

Note: The following article was helping in finding some of these quotes on Earth as a living being, and has additional things of interest along these lines. The article is called “The Living Earth: A Nineteenth-Century Latter-day Saint Perspective” by J. Michael Hunter of BYU:
<https://scholarsarchive.byu.edu/cgi/viewcontent.cgi?referer=&httpsredir=1&article=2384&context=facpub>

See also <https://www.mormonthink.com/QUOTES/earth.htm>

For one of my favorite books on this subject, see Rodney Turner's book “This Eternal Earth: A Scriptural and Prophetic Biography.”

Element Has Intelligence: Scriptures

D&C 93:28–35: 28 He that keepeth his commandments receiveth truth and light, until he is glorified in truth and knoweth all things.

29 Man was also in the beginning with God. Intelligence, or the light of truth, was not created or made, neither indeed can be.

30 All truth is independent in that sphere in which God has placed it, to act for itself, as all intelligence also; otherwise there is no existence.

31 Behold, here is the agency of man, and here is the condemnation of man; because that which was from the beginning is plainly manifest unto them, and they receive not the light.

32 And every man whose spirit receiveth not the light is under condemnation.

33 For man is spirit. The elements are eternal, and spirit and element, inseparably connected, receive a fulness of joy;

34 And when separated, man cannot receive a fulness of joy.

35 The elements are the tabernacle of God; yea, man is the tabernacle of God, even temples; and whatsoever temple is defiled, God shall destroy that temple.

D&C 88: 22–24, 36–43: 22 For he who is not able to abide the law of a celestial kingdom cannot abide a celestial glory.

23 And he who cannot abide the law of a terrestrial kingdom cannot abide a terrestrial glory.

24 And he who cannot abide the law of a telestial kingdom cannot abide a telestial glory; therefore he is not meet for a kingdom of glory. Therefore he must abide a kingdom which is not a kingdom of glory.

36 All kingdoms have a law given;

37 And there are many kingdoms; for there is no space in the which there is no kingdom; and there is no kingdom in which there is no space, either a greater or a lesser kingdom.

38 And unto every kingdom is given a law; and unto every law there are certain bounds also and conditions.

39 All beings who abide not in those conditions are not justified.

40 For intelligence cleaveth unto intelligence; wisdom receiveth wisdom; truth embraceth truth; virtue loveth virtue; light cleaveth unto light; mercy hath compassion on mercy and claimeth her own; justice continueth its course and claimeth its own; judgment goeth before the face of him who sitteth upon the throne and governeth and executeth all things.

41 He comprehendeth all things, and all things are before him, and all things are round about him; and he is above all things, and in all things, and is through all things, and is round about all things; and all things are by him, and of him, even God, forever and ever.

42 And again, verily I say unto you, he hath given a law unto all things, by which they move in their times and their seasons;

43 And their courses are fixed, even the courses of the heavens and the earth, which comprehend the earth and all the planets.

Abraham 3:18–19: 18 Howbeit that he made the greater star; as, also, if there be two spirits, and one shall be more intelligent than the other, yet these two spirits, notwithstanding one is more intelligent than the other, have no

beginning; they existed before, they shall have no end, they shall exist after, for they are gnolaum, or eternal.

19 And the Lord said unto me: These two facts do exist, that there are two spirits, one being more intelligent than the other; there shall be another more intelligent than they; I am the Lord thy God, I am more intelligent than they all.

Element Has Intelligence: Quotes

Elder Bruce R. McConkie said: “Intelligence or spirit element became intelligences after the spirits were born as individual entities. Use of this name designates both the primal element from which the spirit offspring were created and also their inherited capacity to grow in grace . . .” (*Mormon Doctrine*, 387).

Joseph Fielding Smith answered “why does not God create intelligence and prevent evil?” as follows: “If the Lord declares that intelligence, something which we do not fully understand, was co-eternal with him and always existed, there is no argument that we can or should present to contradict it. Why he cannot create intelligence is simply because intelligence, like time and space, always existed, and therefore did not have to be created.” (*Answers to Gospel Questions Vol. 3*:125).

Elder Widtsoe said: “The Gospel teaches that, associated with the universal energy that vivifies universal matter, and possibly identified with it, is universal intelligence, a force which is felt wherever matter and energy are found, which is everywhere. The forces of the universe do not act blindly, but are expressions of a universal intelligence. That a degree of intelligence is possessed by every particle of energized matter cannot be said; nor is it important. . . . “Man was also in the beginning with God.” The doctrine that man is an eternal being leads to untold possibilities. Eternal man lived a personal life before the earth-life began, and he continues a personal existence hereafter.” (*A Rational Theology* 13–14).

Joseph Smith said, “All the minds and spirits that God ever sent into the world are susceptible of enlargement” (Teachings of the Prophet Joseph Smith 354).

Additional provoking insights on the topic of intelligences can be found at these articles:

<https://rsc.byu.edu/pearl-great-price-revelations-god/history-intelligence-latter-day-saint-thought>

<https://www.mormondialogue.org/topic/56621-mcconkie-on-intelligences/>

<https://jod.mrm.org/7/282>

https://www.reddit.com/r/mormon/comments/1cummb/lds_cosmology_theology_intelligences/

PART 2: RADIOMETRIC DATING

Radiometric Ages of the Old Earth?



On page 52 the LTSR authors bring up isotopes and radiometric decay rates of rocks to determine both the age of the earth and when life began on it. Based on this they claim, “...the earth is about 4.6 billion years old. We can also look to science to learn when the first life-forms appeared.” They go on, “the first living things began to appear at least by 1.9 billion years ago and possibly even before, at 3.4-3.6 billion years ago. Thus, if God prepared evolution as a mechanism for creation, then this creation presumably began with this first life-form, which then transformed through generations...”

This is more evidence that the authors are completely committed to evolutionary theory. Notice their claim that God ‘prepared’ evolution as a mechanism for creation. This is a soft sale, as evolution claims that evolution caused all creation, it's not just one mechanism. Why should we accept half of a theory and not the whole? Truly there is no room (no need) for God in evolution. For two, if you want to bring God into this, you need to see what

God has actually said about the creation to temper your speculations. I fear that the predominant culture today is obsessing over mainstream science claims, and accommodating those claims, even when that means setting aside all scriptures related to creation as allegorical, uninspired, or irrelevant. They say things like, “[scriptures are] not meant to be a scientific textbook on how the creation took place.” (LTSR p50) I will debunk these ideas later in this book. In short, they allow science to call the shots, and religion to attend the game if it plays by the rules.

Darwin recognized the need for an old earth to make his theory of species change work. He said, “The belief that species are immutable [unchangeable] productions was almost unavoidable as long as the history of the world was thought to be of short duration.”— *Charles Darwin, Origin of the Species (conclusion to second edition).

Let’s take a closer look at “absolute” radiometric dating methods to see if earth is as old as they need it to be.

All “absolute” radiometric dating methods are built on certain assumptions which cannot be definitively proven. These assumptions are built on theories which cannot be experimentally replicated or proven. For instance, radiocarbon dating depends on the assumption that the creation of radiocarbon in the upper atmosphere has been essentially constant through time. Another unprovable assumption is that decay rates have not changed significantly over time, something which is impossible to prove.

We can’t be sure that there was a constant decay rate in a closed system unimpacted by environmental features. If we can’t tell what the weather will be like in one week, why should we be so confident about the environment of one billion years ago?

Another assumption in radiometric dating is the initial amounts of various elements present. We can’t be sure that there was the same amount of substance started with.

How about the purity of the target substance? We can’t be sure because the sample could be contaminated with environmental argon, lead, and other substances.

Radiometric dating methods depend on each other. Most of them are compared to uranium numbers, so if the uranium numbers were flawed in the

first place (and there are many scenarios in which they could be), then the other methods don't work either.

To review issues with radiometric dating, I will refer to a few points from **Henry Morris** in "Scientific Creationism" chapter 6. He says:

1. You can't know the components of a system in ancient times. No system is closed. A closed system is merely a theoretical idea to simplify things. Since real nature is not a closed system it can be influenced by external variables fluctuating.
2. You cannot ascertain that the decay rate was constant. No process rate is unchangeable in nature. Many factors influence process rates, and these factors can change. Rates are, at best, only statistical averages, not deterministic absolutes. (See the RATE study, for example.)
3. Modern science only accepts dating methods that yield long eons of time and actively rejects other methods.
4. Some of the daughter components may have been initially created at the same time as the parent component. There are many ways daughter products could be incorporated into the systems when first formed.
5. Variables such as lead vaporization and free neutrons, etc., indicate that the lead ages, which are typically the oldest, could indicate nothing whatsoever about age.
6. Modern formations of lava rocks are dated to be millions of years old. When Rock melts it's supposed to reset the clock. Uranium aging on rocks of known ages is incorrect, so why should we trust uranium aging on rocks of unknown ages?
7. We accept the potassium dates which most closely resemble the uranium dates, but the uranium dates themselves are unreliable.
8. The change in argon is from the environment, not the decaying process. Environmental fluid and gaseous argon at the time of lava flow being incorporated into the igneous rock can account for the argon levels rather than the proposed decay rates.
9. Continental drift rates are also based on the potassium argon dating of rocks on the seafloor and are therefore flawed.
10. Rubidium strontium dating is also measured by uranium dating, so bad

uranium methods make these unreliable too.

11. Rubidium strontium can easily be leached out, and there are other obvious flaws.

(End of Morris on radiometric dating.)

The geologic column was developed in the 1800s, long before any radiometric dating techniques were developed in the 1900s. Remember that when you hear claims about the geologic column being precise and absolute. The order that these concepts were developed is of critical importance when we learn that they throw out radiometric dates which don't match the preestablished column. One **evolutionist professor admitted** the selective use of favored radiometric dates in the scientific

community when he said, "If a C-14 date supports our theories, we put it in the main text. **If it does not entirely contradict them, we put it in a footnote. And if it is completely 'out-of-date,' we just drop it.**"

(*T. Save-Soderbergh and *Ingrid U. Olsson, "C-14 Dating and Egyptian Chronology," Radiocarbon Variations and Absolute Chronology, ed. *Ingrid U. Olsson (1970), p. 35 [also in *Pensee, 3(1): 44].)

Another **evolutionist researcher admitted** just how many unapproved radiometric dates they throw out when he said, "It may come

as a shock to some, but **fewer than 50 percent of the radiocarbon dates from geological and archaeological samples in northeastern North America have been adopted as 'acceptable'** by investigators." (*J. Ogden III, "The Use and Abuse of Radiocarbon," in Annals of the New York Academy of Science, Vol. 288, 1977, pp.167-173.)



The point of radiometric dating is that the rocks 'clock' or 'age' gets reset to 0 years old when the rock is melted then solidifies into a new 'baby' rock; they think the earth was melted at its time of creation, so their measurement of the amount of decay is used to say how long ago the earth was formed. This becomes problematic for old earth evolution when fresh igneous rocks developed from witnessed lava flows are radiometrically dated to be millions of years old.

Another problem with radiometric dating is the assumed melted rock the Earth was created from. The book of Genesis describes the creation of Earth as a liquid water sphere without solid form, from which solid rock later came (**Genesis 1:6-10** demonstrates this; consider verse 9 in particular: “**And God said, Let the**



waters under the heaven be gathered together unto one place, and let the dry land appear: and it was so.”) Large bodies of scientific evidence do not support the melted ball picture of creation (see books like Evolution Cruncher and Universal Model vol. 1 for more on that.) I’ll quickly mention one evidence of the non-melted origins of granite, namely that quartz rock (quartz being the majority of all rocks) is piezoelectric, and if they had been melted at any point in time, they would lose their electric capacity. Why is the water Earth creation an issue for radiometric dating? No melted rock, no clock reset.

Recent studies show that neutrinos affect decay rates. Although the changes are infinitesimal, it opens the door to possibilities that special neutrino events or some parts of the galaxy or something like a micronova might change them in significant ways. (see <https://physicsworld.com/a/do-solar-neutrinos-affect-nuclear-decay-on-earth/>)

Many interesting discoveries have been made limiting the history of life on Earth to a very limited timeframe. One intriguing cutting-edge science discovery is that we have found **fresh blood vessels in dinosaur bones**. In 2005, Mary Schweitzer, a paleontologist at North Carolina State University, accidentally found soft tissue in dinosaur bones. She told her assistant to “do it again” 16 times, and they got the same result. She waited an entire year to reveal her findings, worried that she would be ridiculed. Thirteen years later, in 2018, she reported that other scientists were still “thrashing her in the press.” Why wouldn’t scientists be excited about this discovery? Because it contradicts evolution in proving that dinosaurs couldn’t have lived more than 30,000 years ago, which is about how long these tissues last. An outlier study shows 900,000 years, but these figures are both radically shorter than the 65-105 million years ago, when science claims dinosaurs lived. You can watch the 60 Minutes interview of her at this link:

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=0-K7_H27Wq4. Microbiologist Devin Anderson PhD also talks about the discovery of dinosaur tissues. In the “Is Genesis History” documentary, he points out how they’ve even found proteins, etc., in this dinosaur tissue, that it isn’t just bacteria as some evolutionists have claimed.

Consider how supposedly millions and billions of year-old coal and diamonds have carbon-14, which carbon is only supposed to last thousands of years.

Tree ring dating and a plethora of other fields of scientific research put a very limited number on how old Earth can be. One of my favorite limiting sciences is measuring top-soil levels around the world. These measurements and accumulation rates demonstrate a very recent flood of Noah, about 4500 years ago, just like the Bible says.



(Image: Universal Model)

I wonder **why people who believe God used evolution accept evolutionary timetables** - those are timetables that would supposedly be required if no designer was involved! I reject the entire supposition that these timetables could work at all, but the fact that Christian evolutionists defer to these timetables shows how undeveloped and suspect these ideas are.

Henry Morris Scientific Creationism: Ch. 6 Old or Young: How to Date a Rock: Highlights & Commentary



The geologic time scale was made before radiometric dating and radiometric dating is so unreliable that it gives dramatically different dates; they throw out dates which don't match the pre-determined ages.

*Note: One evolution professor admitted the selective use of favored radiometric dates in the scientific community when he said, "If a C-14 date supports our theories, we put it in the main text. If it does not entirely contradict them, we put it in a footnote. And if it is **completely 'out-of-date,' we just drop it.**" (*T. Save-Soderbergh and *Ingrid U. Olsson, "C-14 Dating and Egyptian Chronology," Radiocarbon Variations and Absolute Chronology, ed. *Ingrid U. Olsson (1970), p. 35 [also in *Pensee, 3(1): 44].) End note.*

*Note: Another evolution researcher admitted just how many unapproved radiometric dates they throw out when he said, "It may come as a shock to some, but **fewer than 50 percent of the radiocarbon dates** from geological and archaeological samples in northeastern North America have been adopted as '**acceptable**' by investigators." (*J. Ogden III, "The Use and Abuse of Radiocarbon," in Annals of the New York Academy of Science, Vol. 288, 1977, pp.167-173.) End note.*

God's chief purpose is to create and help man, so God wouldn't waste untold eons of time caring for evolutionary developments without man.

Note: Of course, evolution suggests that God wasn't involved at all. One wonders what God was doing. Naturally, that's the point of evolution – explain away the need for God so that they can explain away God's existence, and of course, eliminate moral codes of conduct He established. End note.

You can't know the components of a system from ancient times. No system is closed. A closed system is just a theoretical idea to simplify things. Since real nature is not a closed system, it can be influenced by fluctuating external variables.

You cannot ascertain that the decay rate was constant.

All these flawed assumptions in today's dating methods prove them unreliable. Furthermore, they only accept dating methods that yield long eons of time and actively reject other methods.

Some of the daughter components may have been initially created at the same time as the parent component. There are many ways daughter products could be incorporated into the systems when first formed.

No process rate is unchangeable in nature. Many factors influence process rates, and these factors can change. Rates are at best only statistical averages, not deterministic absolutes.

Morris discusses the unreliability of uranium, potassium, etc., in radiometric dating. Lead vaporization, free neutrons, etc., indicate that the lead ages, which are typically the oldest, could indicate nothing whatsoever about age.

Modern formations of lava rocks are dated to be millions of years old. When Rock melts, it's supposed to reset the clock. Uranium aging on rocks of known ages is incorrect, so why should we trust uranium aging of rocks of unknown ages?

We accept the potassium dates that most closely resemble the uranium dates, but the uranium dates themselves are unreliable.

The change in argon is from the environment, not the decaying process. Environmental fluid and gaseous argon at the time of lava flow being incorporated into the igneous rock can account for the argon levels rather than the supposed decay rates.

Continental drift rates are also based on potassium argon dating of rocks on the seafloor, which is flawed.

Rubidium strontium dating is also measured by uranium dating, so bad uranium methods make these unreliable too.

Rubidium strontium can easily be leached out, and there are other obvious flaws.

The oldest writings are only 4,000 to 6,000 years old.

Note: My university Egyptology professor, John Gee, told us that the oldest written records date back to around 4,000 BC! This, of course, perfectly fits the Bible's timeframe. End note.



There is no substantial evidence that helium-4 can or does escape through the atmosphere in substantial amounts. Therefore, we are left with the current amount by which we can determine that the Earth is quite young. Helium-4 is probably entering our atmosphere from the sun's Corona. Given a starting point of zero helium in the atmosphere, this maximizes the age of our atmosphere at 1.75×10^5 years.

He discusses the amount of nickel on Earth, which limits the Earth's age to a few thousand years, like 9,000.

Small amounts of ocean metal precipitation limit the Earth's age to several thousand years.

Dating based on the magnetic sphere limits Earth's age to around 6,000-10,000 years.

The processes most likely to be uniform would have occurred over a short period and on a global scale; this makes dating via the magnetic sphere much more reliable than argon or potassium.

Processes at a constant uniformitarian rate date the Earth as very young, and you can only eliminate those if you eliminate the other uniformitarian processes they use to assert that the Earth is old.

There are many more processes that indicate young ages for the Earth than those that suggest old ages. Even the processes that suggest old ages can be better interpreted by the young ages.

Living mollusks have a carbon date of 23,000 years, **indicating that some kind of carbon exchange occurred before death**. This directly contradicts carbon dating assumptions, making the radiocarbon date much too old.

It has been demonstrated that carbon-14 decay rates could have varied in the past.



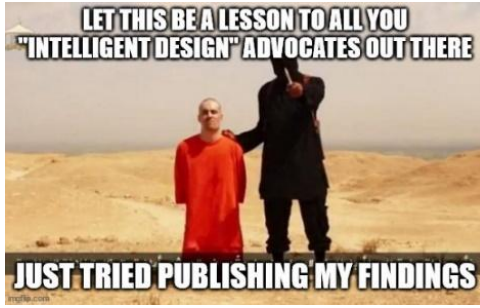
(Image: Universal Model Science)

The amount of natural carbon could have been different in the past, which would have altered the decay ratio. If there had been a significant **difference in the amount of vegetation or volcanic carbon emissions** in the past, the carbon **dates would have dramatically changed**. **Vast coal** deposits around the world attest to the point that there **used to be much more vegetation!**

Population statistics support the idea that humans have been on Earth for only a few thousand years, not upwards of a million, as Evolution says. Even allowing for wars, etc., the number of people that would likely be on Earth if people had been here for upwards of a million years is absurdly high. To make Evolution work, you must make major modifications to basic population statistics, but the creation model fits the data correctly without such major modifications. Additionally, if many people had lived on the Earth for so long, there would theoretically be many more fossils.

Gravitational energy from the sun's inward collapsing process could be much more likely to cause solar energy (rather than nuclear fusion). In 1979, it was confirmed that the sun was shrinking, and it was calculated that it must be quite young. What we know about the sun's size and change of shape indicates that it would have been twice its current size not long ago, which would have annihilated Earth.

Polonium halos in rocks indicate their near-instant creation!



A Failed Clock in the Flooded World: On Radiometric Dating by Dr. Robert Wright

<https://www.afloodofhope.com/post/copy-of-the-astonishing-preservation-of-dinosaur-soft-tissue-radiometric-dating>

A Failed Clock in a Flooded World

Radiometric dating, as promoted by mainstream science, rests on a foundation of unprovable assumptions, circular reasoning, and uniformitarian presuppositions that directly conflict with the clear testimony of Scripture. It claims to provide objective “ages” for rocks and fossils stretching back billions of years, underpinning deep-time evolutionary narratives. Yet, when examined closely through biblical lenses and rigorous creationist research, particularly the RATE (Radioisotopes and the Age of the Earth) project and related studies, it crumbles under its own inconsistencies, contamination issues, inherited daughter products, variable decay rates, and absurd empirical failures. This discussion draws from credible scholarship to demonstrate that radiometric methods do not reliably date the Earth or its rocks. Instead, they reflect the catastrophic, recent history recorded in Genesis.

Foundational Flaws: Assumptions Rooted in Uniformitarianism

Radiometric dating (K-Ar, Rb-Sr, U-Pb, C-14, etc.) measures parent-to-daughter isotope ratios and assumes a constant decay rate to back-calculate time. It rests on three core, untestable assumptions, all steeped in uniformitarianism, “the present is the key to the past,” with processes operating at constant rates over eons:

1. **Constant Decay Rates:** Decay is invariant, unaffected by external conditions.
2. **Closed System:** No parent or daughter isotopes added or removed after formation.
3. **Known Initial Conditions:** No (or known minimal) daughter products at “time zero,” with equilibrium levels established.

These clash with Scripture. Genesis presents a young Earth (about 6,000 years) formed in six literal days, followed by a global Flood about 4,500 years ago that catastrophically reshaped geology (Genesis 1–11; 2 Peter 3:3–7). Uniformitarianism denies this supernatural history, assuming no divine intervention or rapid changes. The Bible affirms rapid creation (“stretching out the heavens,” Isaiah 42:5, 44:24; Psalm 104:2) and catastrophic judgment, not slow, uniform processes.

RATE Project: Overwhelming Evidence of Billions of Years’ Worth of Decay, But in a Young Framework

The RATE initiative (1997–2005), involving ICR, CRS, and leading creation scientists (Larry Vardiman, Russell Humphreys, Steven Austin, John Baumgardner, Andrew Snelling, Eugene Chaffin, Donald DeYoung), was a multi-million-dollar, peer-reviewed effort to test radioisotope dating biblically. Their key findings include:

- **Massive Decay Occurred:** Zircons and minerals show evidence of 500+ million to 1.5+ billion years’ worth of decay at today’s rates. Polonium radiohalos and helium retention confirm this.
- **Accelerated Decay Episodes:** This decay happened rapidly during Creation Week and/or the Flood year.

The Helium in Zircons: A “Time Bomb” That Defies Billions of Years

Imagine drilling deep into the Precambrian granodiorite at Fenton Hill, New Mexico, rocks uniformitarian geologists insist formed 1.5 billion years ago based on U-Pb dating. These tiny zirconium silicate crystals trap uranium and thorium, which decay and produce helium alpha particles. Over supposed eons, that helium should have diffused out completely, especially at borehole

temperatures. Yet RATE researchers extracted zircons retaining up to 58 percent or more of the expected helium.

Humphreys and colleagues measured diffusion rates via stepwise heating experiments. The data matched their young-earth model precisely. Humphreys noted, “Never in my entire scientific career have I ever seen a numerical prediction verified so accurately.” Calculations yielded an average helium diffusion age of about 6,000 plus or minus 2,000 years, aligning with biblical history. The uniformitarian model failed by factors of 100,000 or more. This fits accelerated nuclear processes during Creation Week or the Flood, with God “stretching out the heavens” (Isaiah 40:22; Psalm 104:2) perhaps enabling rapid decay and heat dissipation via volumetric cosmic expansion.

RATE also documented measurable C-14 in “ancient” coal, diamonds, and fossils, impossible under millions of years but fitting a young Earth with adjusted pre-Flood atmospheric ratios.

Specific Assumption Failures: Narratives of Broken Clocks

Picture a geologist carefully selecting a pristine-looking rock sample, confident that laboratory analysis will reveal its “true” age in millions or billions of years. Yet, time and again, the data rebel against the method’s foundational assumptions, revealing instead the fingerprints of recent, catastrophic biblical events. RATE researchers and others, including Andrew Snelling and Steven Austin, have thoroughly documented these failures through field studies, lab analyses, and critical reviews.

Initial Daughter Products and Equilibrium Levels: Assuming a Clean Slate That Never Existed

The method demands we know precisely what the rock contained at formation, typically zero or a negligible amount of daughter isotopes (for example, no radiogenic argon in K-Ar, no initial lead in U-Pb). In reality, magmas and minerals inherit or occlude significant daughter products from their source.

Envision molten rock deep in a magma chamber under high pressure. Argon gas, being inert and mobile, dissolves readily into the melt and gets trapped in growing mineral crystals (phenocrysts) like pyroxene or hornblende. When the lava erupts and cools, this “excess argon” remains, making the rock appear

far older than it is. Steven Austin's Mt. St. Helens study dramatically illustrates this. As he reported, the fundamental assumption, "no radiogenic argon was present when the rock formed," is directly questioned by the data. Phenocrysts occluded argon from the magma, leading to wildly inflated ages for material only years old.

Similarly, in U-Pb dating, "common lead" or inherited primordial lead contaminates zircons from the outset. Snelling and RATE highlight how this "most important and common problem" (as acknowledged even by some secular geochronologists) renders starting conditions unknowable without circular assumptions. Equilibrium levels for C-14 fare no better. The method presumes a stable atmospheric ratio over millennia, yet the Flood drastically altered carbon reservoirs through massive burial of vegetation and volcanic CO₂ releases, invalidating pre-Flood calibrations. These inherited daughters turn the clock into a liar from the moment the rock solidifies.

Contamination and Open Systems: Rocks That Leak and Breathe

Rocks are not sealed vaults. They are dynamic systems exposed to fluids, heat, pressure, and metamorphism. Groundwater percolates through fractures, leaching parents or adding daughters. Metamorphic events can partially reset clocks or introduce foreign isotopes.

Consider Andrew Snelling's detailed studies at Koongarra, Australia, where U-Th-Pb systems in uranium deposits show profound discordance due to ongoing groundwater movement. Isotopes migrated, producing inconsistent "ages" that defy closed-system assumptions. Labs often dismiss such results as "disturbed" samples, yet similar open-system behavior appears widespread. In the Grand Canyon and elsewhere, discordant isochrons reveal mixing lines from contamination rather than true time. As Snelling notes, the assumption of closed systems is unprovable and routinely violated, forcing ad-hoc appeals to later "events" that conveniently salvage the desired old ages. During the Flood, massive hydrothermal activity and sediment deposition would have accelerated such exchanges on a global scale, resetting or contaminating clocks in ways uniformitarianism cannot anticipate.

Uniform Decay Rates: Constant Clocks in a Catastrophic Cosmos

The cornerstone assumption, that decay proceeds at today's measured rates forever, ignores evidence of variability and the Bible's record of supernatural

interventions. While everyday lab conditions show relative stability, experiments reveal influences from temperature, pressure, chemical environment, and even solar radiation or cosmic events. RATE documented helium diffusion and radiohalos consistent with accelerated decay episodes.

Micro-variations appear in studies of isotopes like silicon-32 or radon, showing seasonal fluctuations possibly tied to solar neutrinos or other radiation. Under extreme conditions, high temperatures, pressures, or radiation fields during Creation Week's energy releases or the Flood's tectonic upheavals, rates could accelerate dramatically. The "stretching of the heavens" (Isaiah 40:22; Job 9:8) implies cosmic-scale expansion and energy shifts that could alter nuclear binding forces or remove excess heat (as Humphreys modeled via volumetric expansion). Uniformitarianism's insistence on invariance blinds it to these biblical realities. RATE's findings of "billions of years' worth" of decay compressed into a young framework demand such acceleration, with God sovereignly managing the physics.

When Radiometric Dating May Offer Limited Value

While radiometric methods fail as absolute chronometers for deep time, creationist researchers acknowledge that carbon-14 dating can provide useful relative or approximate information within a biblical young-Earth framework, particularly for post-Flood archaeological and historical contexts. Because C-14 has a short half-life of 5,730 years, it decays rapidly and becomes undetectable after roughly 50,000 to 100,000 years at most under uniform conditions. Its presence in samples therefore sets a firm upper limit on age, consistent with a young Earth.

In practice, C-14 proves most valuable for dating organic materials from the last few thousand years, such as ancient artifacts, wooden tools, textiles, bones, or charcoal from human settlements after the Flood. When properly calibrated to account for changes in atmospheric C-14 levels caused by the Flood (massive carbon burial and volcanic activity) and subsequent variations, it can yield reasonable relative chronologies for biblical-era events or post-Flood civilizations. For instance, it reliably helps sequence Egyptian dynasties, European Bronze Age sites, or Native American settlements within the past 4,000 years or so, aligning with scriptural timelines when assumptions about initial ratios are adjusted.

Creation scientists like Andrew Snelling and those building on RATE emphasize that C-14 serves best as a tool for relative dating rather than

absolute ages. It confirms that supposed “ancient” organic remains (with detectable C-14) cannot be millions of years old, while offering practical utility for recent history. However, even here, results require caution due to potential contamination, reservoir effects (e.g., in marine samples), and the need for biblical calibration models. Other radiometric methods offer even less reliability outside very recent volcanic or metamorphic contexts where excess daughters and open-system issues dominate. Overall, radiometric techniques function at best as secondary corroborative tools within a scriptural worldview, never as overrides to God’s eyewitness account in Genesis.

Comical and Ridiculous Results: Empirical Destruction of the Method: Real-world tests expose the farce with narrative clarity.

Mt. St. Helens Dacite: Fresh Lava Dated as Millions of Years Old

Picture the explosive 1986 eruption of Mount St. Helens, reshaping the landscape in real time. ICR geologist Steven Austin sampled the fresh dacite lava dome, material formed just years earlier, with eyewitness records. He submitted blind samples (whole rock, pyroxene, etc.) to reputable labs for K-Ar dating.

Results were comically absurd: whole-rock gave 0.35 plus or minus 0.05 million years. Pyroxene hit 2.8 plus or minus 0.6 million years, with fractions ranging 0.34–1.7 million. A rock about 10 years old dated hundreds of thousands to millions of years old. The cause was excess argon inherited from magma, trapped under pressure, directly violating the “no initial daughter products” assumption. Austin stated this “questions the fundamental dating assumption” and highlights how phenocrysts occlude primordial argon.

If K-Ar fails spectacularly on known-recent samples, it cannot be trusted for “ancient” rocks. This echoes Flood-era rapid volcanism that contaminated clocks.

Polonium Radiohalos: Instantaneous Evidence in Granite

Envision microscopic concentric halos etched into biotite mica within granites. Robert Gentry's work, integrated into RATE, revealed isolated polonium-210, -214, and -218 halos without precursor uranium/thorium rings. These isotopes have half-lives of 138 days, 164 microseconds, and 3 minutes.

For distinct halos to form, minerals had to crystallize almost instantly, faster than polonium could decay. Slow cooling over millions of years would erase or prevent them. RATE links these to accelerated decay during the Flood or Creation Day Three (Genesis 1:9–10), with hydrothermal fluids rapidly transporting polonium amid catastrophe. These delicate scars are fingerprints of supernatural speed.

Carbon-14 in “Ancient” Materials: Breathing Life into Dead Assumptions

Consider coal seams, diamonds, and dinosaur fossils dated by evolutionists to millions or billions of years. RATE and Baumgardner's studies detected consistent measurable C-14 above background. Ten U.S. coal samples yielded “ages” of only tens of thousands of years. Diamonds (supposedly 1–3 billion years old) retain C-14.

With a 5,730-year half-life, C-14 should vanish after about 50,000–100,000 years. Its presence indicates recent burial during the Flood from pre-Flood biomass. Contamination excuses fail against protocols. The data support a young, catastrophically buried world.

Discordant Isochrons and Inherited Isotopes: Internal Contradictions

Andrew Snelling's analyses of Grand Canyon amphibolites and other Precambrian rocks show alpha-decay systems (U-Pb) yielding older “ages” than beta-decay (Rb-Sr, K-Ar) on identical samples. Isochrons scatter wildly due to inheritance and mixing.

New Zealand's Mt. Ngauruhoe flows (less than 50 years old) gave K-Ar ages up to 3.5 million years from excess argon. Hawaiian, Australian, and other recent lavas repeatedly date millions of years old. These patterns reveal open-system behavior and violated assumptions. Accelerated decay during biblical catastrophes explains the discordance.

Broader Research

- **Radiohalos and Helium Diffusion:** Confirm rapid processes.
- **Isochron Discordance:** Snelling et al. expose lack of internal consistency.
- **C-14 Consistency:** Across global samples, supporting Flood geology.

These align with Genesis: rapid sedimentation, volcanism, and metamorphism during the Flood reset or contaminated clocks.

Biblical Perspective: Truth Over False Premise

Scripture presents a coherent young-Earth history. Radiometric “ages” are illusions created by accelerated processes, invalid assumptions, and Flood-scale contamination. As RATE concluded, the data fit a about 6,000-year timeline when interpreted biblically. Uniformitarianism is the scoffers’ philosophy (2 Peter 3:3–6).

Radiometric dating does not accurately date the past. It fails assumptions, produces ridiculous results (Mt. St. Helens, recent lavas), and requires divine-scale accelerations and heat removal only explainable by the God of Genesis. The rocks testify to recent creation and the Flood. Christians must trust God’s Word over man-centered clocks.

How Tree Rings Support the Biblical Account of the Global Flood: On Dendrochronology by Dr. Robert Wright

<https://www.afloodofhope.com/post/dendrochronology-tree-ring-dating> on 5.17.26

(Dr. Robert Wright: Dr. Bob, a Latter-day Saint creation advocate, was a Nuclear Engineer on submarines in the US Navy. He received his Master's Degree in Theology and his Ph.D. in Biblical Studies. His area of study was the synthesis of faith and science, using the Biblical Flood as a model. He is the author of numerous books including *A Flood of Hope: It's OK to Believe* and *Satan's War with God*. With his wife Carol, he is the founder

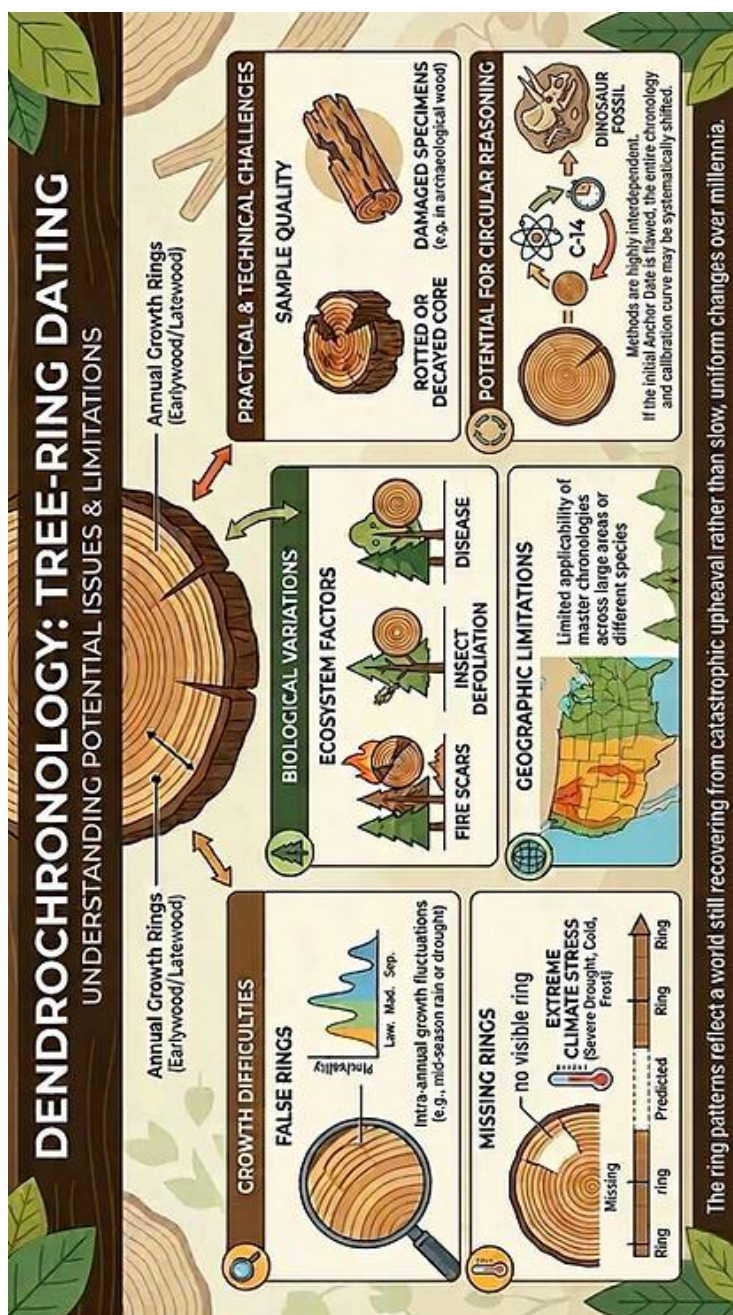
of The Learning Institute Foundation and The Flood Museum. See his website AFloodOfHope.com.)

How Tree Rings Support the Biblical Account of the Global Flood

Secular scientists frequently cite dendrochronology (the study of tree growth rings) as evidence that the earth is thousands of years older than the timeline given in Scripture. Yet when the method's foundational assumptions are examined in light of documented scientific observations, the data align far more closely with the biblical record of a recent creation and a global flood approximately 4,500 years ago.

Dendrochronology examines the annual layers of wood that many trees add just beneath the bark. In spring and early summer, rapid growth produces lighter-colored "earlywood." Later in the season, slower growth forms darker "latewood," creating a visible boundary. By counting these rings in living trees and cross-dating their patterns with dead wood and subfossil logs, researchers construct "master chronologies" claimed to extend back nearly 9,000 years. The most prominent examples involve ancient bristlecone pines in California's White Mountains and giant sequoias, including those at Calaveras Big Trees State Park. These chronologies are then used to calibrate radiocarbon (C-14) dating and to reconstruct past climates.

The entire system rests on one critical and unproven assumption: that each tree produces exactly one growth ring per year. Scientific research demonstrates that this assumption frequently fails.



Multiple Rings in a Single Year (False Rings)

Under stressful environmental conditions, such as drought, sudden temperature fluctuations, or insect damage, trees can form extra “false” or intra-annual rings that are nearly indistinguishable from true annual rings.

Plantation pines closely related to bristlecone pines have been documented producing up to five rings in a single growing season. Controlled laboratory experiments on young bristlecone pines have confirmed that deliberate changes in water availability and temperature reliably trigger multiple growth layers within months. Additional studies on stressed conifers in arid regions have shown intra-annual growth bands in more than 63 percent of sampled trees. These observations are especially relevant to dry-climate species like bristlecone pines, which dominate long dendrochronology records.

Missing Rings

Conversely, in years of extreme cold, severe drought, or other stress, a tree may produce no visible ring at all or a ring so thin that it is absent from portions of the trunk. This phenomenon is well-documented in the scientific literature, particularly among bristlecone pines growing at high elevations and in marginal habitats. Mainstream dendrochronologists acknowledge missing rings in up to 5 percent of years in some chronologies, yet they maintain that statistical cross-dating corrects for them. Post-flood climatic instability, marked by dramatic temperature swings, erratic rainfall patterns, and rapid environmental shifts, would have produced precisely the conditions that generate both false rings and missing rings on a widespread scale.

Circular Reasoning in Master Chronologies

Extending chronologies beyond the lifespan of living trees requires overlapping ring-width patterns from subfossil wood. Because multiple statistical matches are often possible, researchers rely on “independent” anchors such as radiocarbon dates or presumed correlations with known volcanic eruptions and droughts to select the best alignment. Once these overlaps are chosen, the resulting tree-ring master chronology is then used to calibrate radiocarbon dating curves (such as the widely used IntCal series) and to date the very climatic events originally referenced. In effect, radiocarbon dates help build the ring chronology, which is then cited as independent confirmation of the radiocarbon dates themselves. This circular process assumes the uniformitarian, deep-time framework it claims to validate.

When the biblical timeline is accepted as the correct historical framework, these complications resolve naturally. The ring patterns reflect a world still recovering from catastrophic upheaval rather than slow, uniform changes over millennia.



The Evidence Fits the Biblical Timeline

Accounting for false rings, missing rings, and variable growth rates under fluctuating conditions brings the oldest living trees comfortably within the post-flood timeframe. Ring counts on giant sequoias at Calaveras reach roughly 3,200 years, while even secular sources note the potential for overcounting. Conservative estimates place these trees well within the 4,000-to-5,000-year window since Noah's Flood, consistent with saplings that could have taken root shortly after the waters receded. Bristlecone pine chronologies, once stripped of inflated assumptions about perfect annual rings and circular calibration, tell the same story: hardy survivors that have witnessed the rise and fall of post-flood civilizations, but not the millions of years demanded by evolutionary models.

Fossil sequoias and other tree species entombed worldwide in flood-laid sediments further confirm that vast pre-flood forests were rapidly buried during the Genesis cataclysm. The living trees we observe today are the direct descendants of those that survived the Flood aboard the Ark or sprouted in the decades that followed.

The rings preserved in ancient trees do not provide support for deep-time. On the contrary, when the scientific data are interpreted without the presupposition of millions of years, they become one more powerful witness to the global flood described in Genesis and to the faithfulness of the Creator who both judged the earth and promised never to flood it again.

True science, when freed from philosophical bias, consistently points back to the authority of God's Word. The silent testimony of the forests reminds us

that the same God who preserved life through the Flood is the God who offers eternal salvation today through Jesus Christ—the ultimate Ark of refuge for humanity.

PART 3: THE GLOBAL FLOOD OF NOAH: **MASS FOSSILIZATION & KEY TO AGE OF** **EARTH**



(Charles Willson Peale 1819, Public domain, via Wikimedia Commons)

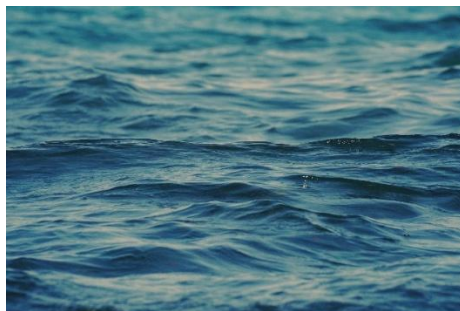
Many sections of this book contribute evidence for the global flood, but this section includes some essays particularly focused on the flood.

Why does a global flood matter?

- The Bible says there was a global flood, so there was. It's not just culture and perspectives, it's the word of God, and the Biblical record on this is plain as day.

- It proves Biblical chronologies, informing us on the age of the Earth.
- It destroys the geologic column.
- It demonstrates that the fossil record was created in a recent single event.
- In total, the global flood destroys evolution theory.

Worldwide Flood of Noah: Doctrines



Modern science flatly rejects the worldwide flood of Noah. A worldwide flood is tremendous evidence for catastrophism and a young Earth, everything evolutionists hate.

Let's start with the **LDS Bible Dictionary** entry on **Noah's Flood**:

The tradition of a great flood is found in nearly every ancient culture. A Babylonian account closely resembles the record in the Bible, but the biblical account differs from all others in its religious value and the purpose of it. The scriptural account teaches that the Flood was sent to cleanse the earth because of the wickedness of the people. Noah and his family were saved because they were righteous ([Gen. 6:9](#); [Moses 8:27](#)). The authenticity of the Genesis account of the Flood is confirmed by latter-day revelation as recorded in [Moses 7:34, 42–43](#); [8:8–30](#). See also [Ether 13:2](#).

As we can see, this confirms that the flood was global in scope, intended to cleanse the Earth, and that many scriptures of the Restoration support this fact.

Let's review some good old common sense that Noah's flood was not merely local:

- Noah could have just **moved**.
- Noah would not have had to take the **animals**.
- God's judgement on the whole world was completed, not just one area.
- Jesus compares the global judgement of the flood as a type of judgement that will happen at His worldwide return (Matthew 24:37–39).
- The Bible says all flesh died in this event.
- The flood was a **symbol** of Earth's immersion baptism.
- God didn't use anyone else to renew his covenant, Noah was the only person available.
- There are **300 legends** of a worldwide flood around the world, involving only a few survivors.
- Hundreds of **geological** evidences around the world indicate a major flood at the time indicated by the Bible about 4,500 years ago.
- A local flood could not **last as long** as the Bible describes or cover the **mountains**. (See the Ark in the Darkness documentary.)
- **Recurring local floods** would have violated God's covenant to not flood the Earth again.
- The ark was much bigger than typical boats of the time.
- Evolutionists push a local flood because they want global fossils to fit in their geologic column of millions of years. The global flood shows a young Earth, which can't allow for evolution, even if such were possible.
- Quartz-based fossils aren't forming today – unique conditions for fossilization existed during the flood. Anywhere you see fossils, Noah's flood was there!
- Prototypical animals were called to the Ark by God, and could easily have been put into hibernation by God for an easy voyage.
- It's easier to believe that all the animals originated from the ark than to believe that all the animals originated from slime! (Thanks for that point from Dr. Kent Hovind.)

Leaders of the restored Church of Christ have repeatedly taught that the Earth was ‘**baptized**’ (by immersion, as that is the restored knowledge of the right way to baptize) by the flood. In summary, these prophets taught this doctrine:

- **Peter, New Testament, 1 Peter 3:20-21**
- **Joseph Smith, T.P.J.S. p.12**
- **Brigham Young, JD, 1:274; JD 8:83**
- **Lorenzo Snow, The Only Way to Be Saved (London: D. Chalmers, 1841), 3-4.**
- **Joseph Fielding Smith, Doctrines of Salvation, 2:320; Man His Origin and Destiny, 433-36**
- **John A. Widtsoe, Evidences and Reconciliations, 127**
- **And Others: Elders Orson Pratt, Orson F. Whitney, Bruce R. McConkie**

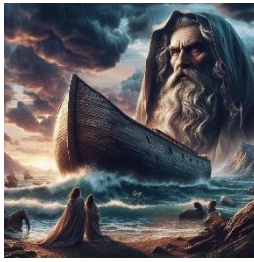
Of course there’s always the party poopers. BYU Hawaii President Richard T. Wootton in his book Saints and Scientists

said, “(Gen. 7:19-20) To take this to mean that the tops of all the mountains, and Ararat, were covered at least 15 cubic deep and the whole earth correspondingly takes an **extremely Literal and narrow** reading of Genesis. It hinges on **inflexible rendition** of two words, all and whole. It gives **no recognition** that it may only [be] a report of the scene **as it appeared to the local observer**, rather than as if god himself were the writer, which, if one wishes to be literal, the Bible itself does not literally affirm.” (Richard T. Wootton—President BYU Hawaii 1959-1964, Saints and Scientists, p.45-46)

As for me and my house, we will continue to take scripture literally, and we will maintain our inflexible view of the words ‘all’ and ‘whole.’

Duane E. Jeffery claims that the scripture isn’t clear on the flood. He says, “**Latter-day scriptures do not really clarify** the question of whether the Noachian flood covered the entire earth or if it was a more localized event. **Clearly**, through out our tradition’s history, we have tended to read the flood as universal, but I believe that **is less from the influence of scripture** itself and far more because we have been culturally predisposed to read it that way” (Duane E. Jeffery—BYU Professor 1969—currently listed emeritus/retired; Noah’s Flood: Modern Scholarship and Mormon Traditions, oct 2004, Sunstone, p.35; <https://www.sunstonemagazine.com/issues/134.pdf>)

The prophets are not deterred by these theories of men. Elder Mark E. Peterson taught concerning the flood, “**Latter-day saints do seek knowledge. We strongly advocate study, research, and education; but we cannot agree with misguided conclusions that defy the scriptures and seem to refute revelation. Revelation is real! Revelation is sure!**” (Elder Mark E. Peterson, Noah and the Flood, p.92)



In our effort to establish the events of the creation as literal, let us remember passages on the flood from **Genesis 6:12-13, 17-19**: “**12** And God looked upon the earth, and, behold, it was corrupt; for **all** flesh had corrupted his way upon the earth. **13** And God said unto Noah, The end of **all** flesh is come before me; for the earth is **filled** with violence through them; and, behold, **I will destroy them with the earth.**”

“**17** And, behold, I, even I, do bring a flood of waters upon the earth, to destroy **all** flesh, wherein is the breath of life, from under heaven; *and every thing that is in the earth shall die.* **18** But with thee will I establish my covenant; and thou shalt come into the ark, thou, and thy sons, and thy wife, and thy sons’ wives with thee. **19** And of **every living thing of all flesh**, two of every *sort* shalt thou bring into the ark, to keep *them* alive with thee; they shall be male and female.”



Note that God used Noah to establish His covenant because Noah was the only person left, along with his small family. He also didn't just tell Noah to move away, because the flood wasn't local. He had to bring the animals for this reason as well. Earth was immersed completely in its baptism. Further, as Henry Morris pointed out, God's promise to never again send a flood would be broken repeatedly if it were only a local flood.

Genesis 7:4, 11, 17-24 establishes the universality of the flood:

“4 For yet seven days, and I will cause it to rain upon the earth forty days and forty nights; and every living substance that I have made will I destroy from off the face of the earth.”

“11 ¶ In the six hundredth year of Noah's life, in the second month, the seventeenth day of the month, the same day were all the fountains of the great deep broken up, and the windows of heaven were opened. 17 And the flood was forty days upon the earth; and the waters increased, and bare up the ark, and it was lifted up above the earth.”

“18 And the waters prevailed, and were increased greatly upon the earth; and the ark went upon the face of the waters. 19 And the waters prevailed exceedingly upon the earth; and all the high hills, that were under the whole heaven, were covered. 20 Fifteen cubits upward did the waters prevail; and the mountains were covered. 21 And all flesh died that moved upon the earth, both of fowl, and of cattle, and of beast, and of every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth, and every man: 22 All in whose nostrils was the breath of life, of all that was in the dry land, died. 23 And every living substance was destroyed which was upon the face of the ground, both man, and cattle, and the creeping things, and the fowl of the heaven; and they were destroyed from the earth: and Noah only remained alive, and they that were with him in the ark. 24 And the waters prevailed upon the earth an hundred and fifty days.”

“Prevailed” means won, or were on top of, here meaning completely covering.

The phrase “**under the whole heaven**” is used in the Old Testament only in a universal sense (see Deut. 2:25; Deut. 4:19; Job 28:24; Job 37:3; Dan. 9:12), never referencing a geographically restricted region.

The word “**hills**” in the account is from the Hebrew *harim*, meaning “mountains”.

The land of Egypt had been under the floodwaters before being settled by Ham's daughter and her sons (see **Abraham 1:24**).

The Book of Mormon says the New World had been inundated with floodwaters: “...after the waters had receded from off the face of this land it became a choice land above all other lands, a chosen land of the Lord; wherefore the Lord would have that all men should serve him who dwell upon the face thereof.” (Ether 13:2)

Noah is father of ALL Kingdoms (Moses 8:3): “And it came to pass that Methuselah prophesied that from his loins should spring **all the kingdoms of the earth**, and he took glory unto himself.” (Moses 8:3) Thus we see that the posterity of Noah are who fill all the nations. Noah is a universal father of all who came after the flood. This is further proof that the flood was worldwide.

Jaredites Bring Animals to Repopulate a New World? (Ether 2:1-3 & Ether 6:4) After the Flood, at some point just before the Tower of Babel, the Jaredites left on barges for the Americas. Consider the almost ark-like preparations they made: “And it came to pass that Jared and his brother, and their families, and also the friends of Jared and his brother and their families, went down into the valley which was northward, (and the name of the valley was Nimrod, being called after the mighty hunter) with their flocks which they had gathered together, male and female, of every kind. “And they did also lay snares and catch fowls of the air; and they did also prepare a vessel, in which they did carry with them the fish of the waters. “And they did also carry with them deseret, which, by interpretation, is a honey bee; and thus they did carry with them swarms of bees, and all manner of that which was upon the face of the land, seeds of every kind.” (Ether 2:1-3) And also: “And it came to pass that when they had prepared all manner of food, that thereby they might subsist upon the water, and also food for their flocks and herds, and whatsoever beast or animal or fowl that they should carry with them—and it came to pass that when they had done all these things they got aboard of their vessels or barges, and set forth into the sea, commending themselves unto the Lord their God.” (Ether 6:4) Being such a short time after the Flood, were the Jaredites aware that any destination of any distance would likely be sparse in useful crops and animal life? Did they take all these various seeds and animals not only to survive the journey but to repopulate a new world?

Joseph Smith Teaches The Worldwide Flood

“In the days of Noah, God destroyed the world by a flood, and He has promised to destroy it by fire in the last days...” (Teachings of the Prophet Joseph Smith, selected and arranged by Joseph Fielding Smith [Salt Lake City: Deseret Book Co., 1976], 337)

“Noah was born to save seed of everything, when the earth was washed of its wickedness by the flood.” (Teachings of the Prophet Joseph Smith, selected and arranged by Joseph Fielding Smith [Salt Lake City: Deseret Book Co., 1976], 12)

Oliver Huntington (Joseph Smith’s brothers-in-law), referring to a teaching of Joseph Smith, said: “It appears that their [the ante-diluvian people’s] emigration was all from the west to the east, and, according to the words of the Prophet Joseph, mankind in that age continued to emigrate eastwardly until they reached the country on or near the Atlantic coast; and that in or near Carolina Noah built his remarkable ship, in which he, his family, and all kinds of animals lived a few days over one year without coming out of it.” Juvenile Instructor 30 (November 15, 1895): 700–

701. <https://catalog.churchofjesuschrist.org/assets/970d0381-ff02-42f4-a49f-1794dedab459/0/0>.

Brigham Young Teaches The Worldwide Flood

“All the rest [save eight souls] were swept from the face of the earth. This is according to the account given to us in the Old Testament which we believe. I know that there are a great many in the world who are so wise in their own eyes that they are not disposed to believe the account contained in the Bible of the Creation, of Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden, the antediluvian world and other things, but we profess to believe, and we do or should believe these things.” (Brigham Young, Journal of Discourses, 13: 314)

“The earth, the Lord says, abides its creation; it has been baptized with water, and will, in the future, be baptized with fire and the Holy Ghost, to be prepared to go back into the celestial presence of God.” (Discourses of Brigham Young, selected and arranged by John A. Widtsoe [Salt Lake City: Deseret Book Co., 1954], 393.)

John Taylor Teaches The Worldwide Flood

“Then a flood came and the inhabitants of the world, with the exception of a very few, were swept from it, after the Gospel had been preached to all who then lived and all had had an opportunity to believe in and obey it...” (Journal of Discourses, 26 vols. [London: Latter-day Saints’ Book Depot, 1854- 1886], 17: 206)

“Look again at the time that Noah came from the ark, after he and his household were saved from the flood that drowned the world; they were the

only ones that were righteous. When Noah and his family had seen the dreadful wreck, the awful calamity, the heart-rending scenes of distress and anguish, trouble and death, that overwhelmed the world..." (Journal of Discourses, 26 vols. [London: Latter-day Saints' Book Depot, 1854- 1886], 1: 371)

"the world was to be destroyed by a flood; and there were provisions made for the continuance of the human family, and it was made known to Methuselah that his seed should be the medium through which should be perpetuated the human family upon the earth." (Journal of Discourses, 26 vols. [London: Latter-day Saints' Book Depot, 1854- 1886], 21: 243)

Many other prophets of the restoration have also taught in defense of the scriptural accounts of the flood.

Scientists 200 years ago



Proof that global flood
wiped out dinos 4500yrs ago

imgflip.com

Scientists today



Local flood,
millions of years

Global Flood: Evidence: Analysis of Cultural Stories, William T. Pelletier, Ph. D

Cultural Evidence for the Worldwide Flood: The 270+ Similar Flood Stories

Over 270 of these myths have been identified across the world, from the Americas, to Europe, to the Middle East, to the Far East.

(A list of collected flood myths can be found at <https://www.talkorigins.org/faqs/flood-myths.html> and a sampler of some of these myths can be reviewed in this video https://youtu.be/hxEg9P29SHs?si=lJ9zOc02_zkLyIUc and this one <https://youtu.be/Pce--fdyCs0?si=Hw2eRpTqU4JfwmCL>)

William T. Pelletier, Ph. D, reinforcing this passing down of Flood memories, writes on his website:

“And this is exactly what we do find all over the world — flood stories from at least 265 different people groups, many including a version of Noah’s name.

- 95% of them say the flood was worldwide, killing almost everyone
- 70% say the flood was sent by “god”
- 60% say the flood was because of man’s wickedness
- 66% say a god forewarned the family of the flood
- 70% say one family was saved on a boat
- 25% say animals were also saved on the boat
- 57% say survivors landed on a mountain
- 7% mention a rainbow – 9% say exactly eight people were saved.”

(William T. Pelletier, Ph. D, Evidence of Noah’s Flood: Worldwide Memories <https://biblescienceguy.wordpress.com/2022/06/08/evidence-of-noahsflood-worldwide-memories/>)

Global Flood: Evidence: Table of Nations, Bill Cooper etc.

The Table of Nations Gives Accurate Worldwide Geneological Accounts Tracing Back to Sons of Noah

Introduction

A summary of the Table of Nations three branches from which the nations originate is as follows:

The Three Branches

- Japhethites (Mediterranean/North): Typically associated with coastal and northern peoples, including Gomer, Magog, Madai, Javan (Greeks), Tubal, Meshek, and Tiras.
- Hamites (Africa/Southwest Asia): Often linked to nations south of Israel, including Cush (Ethiopia), Egypt (Mizraim), Put, and Canaan, along with Nimrod of Babylon.
- Shemites (Middle East): Associated with areas around Mesopotamia and the Levant, including Elam, Asshur, and Arpachshad (ancestor of Abraham)

Sources:

Table of Nations at CreationWiki https://creationwiki.org/Table_of_Nations

The Table of Nations: The Geography of the World in Genesis 10
<https://www.thetorah.com/article/the-table-of-nations-the-geography-of-the-world-in-genesis-10>

<https://bibleproject.com/bible/niv/genesis/10/>

How to interpret genealogies in the Bible: The Table of Nations (Genesis 10)
 by [The Inquisitive Bible Reader](#) -
https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=zZ_kv77ZiNY&t=35s

The Table of the Nations, the Tower of Babel, and the Marriage Supper of the Lamb: Part 1 <https://albertmohler.com/2015/02/24/the-table-of-the-nations-the-tower-of-babel-and-the-marriage-supper-of-the-lamb-part-1/>

Analysis of Bill Cooper:

In his book *After the Flood*, Bill Cooper explores the ancient chronologies and genealogies of various cultures and peoples and shows how they match up with biblical events and genealogies, all originating in one of the three sons of Noah. He also exposes the weakness of the argument of “pious fraud” (the idea that such histories and genealogies were superimposed on ancient pedigrees and records by later Christian monks and scribes).

Cooper explains his experience in conducting this research:

“Over the years, little by little, pieces of corroborative evidence came together and a picture began to build up that revealed the tenth and eleventh chapters of Genesis to be an astonishingly accurate record of events. The Table of Nations had listed **all the families and tribes of mankind in their correct groupings, whether those groupings were ethnological, linguistic or geographical**. All the names, without exception, were accurate, and in more that twenty-five years of searching and analysing, I uncovered not one mistake or false

statement of fact in the Table of Nations.” (After the Flood, Bill Cooper B.A. (Hons), New Wine Press, 1995. pp. 38-39)

Cooper concludes: “...we may by all the evidence noted above that not only did our ancient forebears look back, **in pre-Christian times, to their descent from patriarchs that are named in the Table of Nations, but they also held that the earth was of recent creation and that it had once suffered a Flood. And they knew all this without any recourse to the book of Genesis**, of which they were entirely unaware. In all, their records constitute a rather formidable body of evidence.” (After the Flood, Bill Cooper B.A. (Hons), New Wine Press, 1995. pp. 128-9)

Special thanks to Darren Andrews who helped compile research on evidences for the flood. For his free ebook giving a more detailed analysis, see <https://richardsonstudies.com/worldwide-flood-andrews/>.

Dr. Dan Biddle on Noah’s Flood vs Evolution for Fossils on Genesis Apologetics 46m - Highlights

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=e-LZzFZfO8Q>

Thumbnail of the video was as follows:

10 Factors about Dinosaur Burial/Fossils		
Dinosaurs:	Biblical Flood	Evolution/MOY
#1: Are everywhere (the Vast Extent)	✓	Possible
#2: Buried Furiously (Disarticulated)	✓	No
#3: Quickly Buried in Mud	✓	No (not all)
#4: Quickly Buried in Ash	✓	No (not all)
#5: Buried Simultaneously in Groups	✓	No
#6: Frequently Mixed with Marine Fossils	✓	Possible
#7: Frequently Buried w/o Juveniles	✓	No
#8: Biomaterials (15 types) in Bones	✓	No
#9: Carbon-14 in Bones	✓	No
#10: Mummified	✓	No
		45:52

Note: This chart does a good job of over-viewing flood vs evolution because it shows the scope of the fossils, which isn't sufficiently covered by evolution. Dr. Carl Werner has pointed out along these lines that evolution would require 18 global floods to account for it's theory.

He also shows these PhD researchers who have found mechanisms for the flood:

Answers in Depth, Vol. 5 (2010)
www.answersingenesis.org/doc/articles/aid/v5/catastrophic_plate_tectonics.pdf

Catastrophic Plate Tectonics: A Global Flood Model of Earth History

Steven A. Austin, Ph.D., Institute for Creation Research, now an independent researcher.
John R. Baumgardner, Ph.D., Los Alamos National Laboratory, now an independent researcher.
D. Russell Humphreys, Ph.D., Sandia National Laboratories, now an independent researcher.
Andrew A. Snelling, Ph.D., Creation Science Foundation, now with Answers in Genesis (USA).
Larry Vardiman, Ph.D., Institute for Creation Research.
Kurt P. Wise, Ph.D., Bryan College, now at Truett-McConnell College.





He points out:

We can tell the continents didn't slowly move apart over millions of years because the same ecosystem and animals fossils are found on several continents. This classic evidence for Pangea also functions as evidence of

rapid continent division. There aren't different evolved animals in the different continents due to millions of years of spreading continents.

There are many organic dinosaur bones. 50 peer reviewed publications demonstrate this. Mark Armitage stretched soft tissue of a triceratops, you can see it clearly in a video, he uses pliers and pushes it around, amazing!

Paul Heller, secular geologist, talks about a massive plate coming in on the American continent, this couldn't have happened slowly. Entire families of dinosaurs were killed. They couldn't live peacefully while the massive plate was subducting etc.

The dinosaur kill zone doesn't match up with the impact range of the Yucatan meteor strike scientists claim killed the dinosaurs.



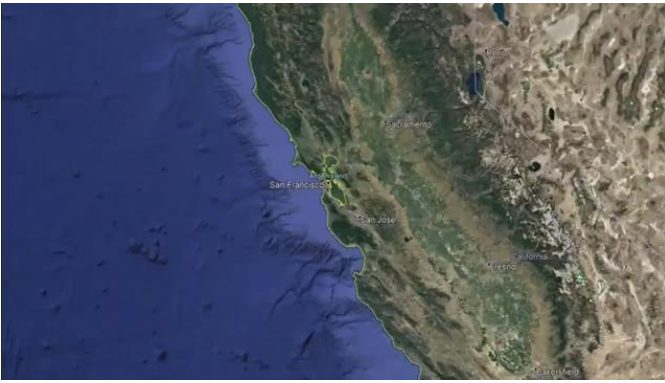
30m

Yes there would be offshore flooding from tsunamis, but not enough for 100 feet deep mud for thousands of miles in the Midwest.

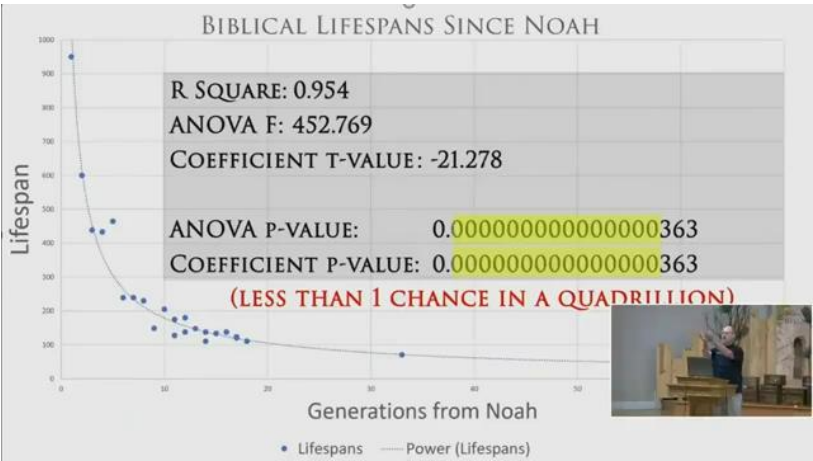
Dinosaurs of different types are

John (Jack) Horner book Digging Dinosaurs subtitle "the search that unraveled the mystery of baby dinosaurs." They found no baby dinos, an unsolved mystery. But it's easy – the catastrophe happens, the adults make a run for it, the babies are left behind. A mile long swath of dinosaurs, not a single juvenile.

Large canyons off the continent edge where water ran off from the flood, these flood runoff channels run for miles.



Shortened lifespans after the flood, Jon Sanford on Genetic Entropy, explains the downward slope of lifespans. Gen. 47:8-9 Jacob says 130 years is few, not like his long-lived forefathers. A genetic bottleneck from inbreeding of Noah's family caused the shortening lifespans.



Is Genesis History? Documentary Highlights: Geology (of the Flood)

Mt. Saint Helens created geological structures that we usually attribute to being extremely old. Powerful mudslides can cut deep into bedrock in just a few days, and catastrophic processes can make big things happen fast.

Note: Another fascinating study is that of the Universal Model Science textbooks (UniversalModel.com), suggesting that the Grand Canyon was formed by flood deposits followed by a major earthquake that split open the formation, revealing the layers. End note.

See Steve Austin, PhD Geologist.

Genesis speaks of fountains of water coming up at the time of Noah's flood.

Note – evolutionists bash on creationism, saying there's not enough water in the atmosphere for a worldwide flood, but we never said there was! Water from the flood came mostly from beneath!

Since the flood, mountains have risen, so we can't examine them to determine how deep the flood was.

Note: We don't have maps of vertical plate movement, just horizontal. Vertical plate movement today is not occurring. The point here is that a flood covering the Earth at one point could have been more shallow than what would be required to cover it today. Notwithstanding, there is compelling evidence for the flood to have been around 5 miles deep, which would cover the tallest known mountains. There are other theories as well. End note.

Note: Several passages (such as 1 Peter 3:20-21) allude to the fact that the earth was baptized by immersion, completely, by the flood. Great evidence exists for this fact in science and religious doctrine. End note.

The standard idea is that the Colorado river wore the Grand Canyon down over tens of thousands of years, but erosion would have collapsed it over that time. The Grand Canyon could have been eroded in just a few weeks. The Grand Canyon would have been from a large powerful flood, not just a local flood. The Grand Canyon more logically would have been made with a lot of water in a little time rather than a little water over a long time.

Science isn't just about evidence, it's about paradigms, how you interpret the evidence.

Note: Good point. Stephen Meyer in "Darwin's Doubt" points out how modern science has arbitrarily decided to refuse to consider any evidence pointing to intelligent design. End note.

Steven Boyd PhD, a Hebraist, says the world's greatest Hebraists agree that Genesis is narrative, not poetic. This means that the text should be understood

as it is written. The biblical text does not conform with the contemporary narrative. God creates mankind. Marriage was invented (by God) at the beginning of mankind. A global flood occurs. The Tower of Babel text shows how different languages evolved.

Jesus descended from Adam, as the Bible's genealogy shows. Mankind was created on the sixth day of creation, which shows that the days of creation could not have been extremely long ago.

Mt. St. Helens was small compared to other historic volcanic eruptions. We can't use present-day rates of processes to determine how long the geological record accumulated (because there are catastrophes that aren't constantly occurring).

The millions of years of decay rate of atoms at the present doesn't mean the rate was consistent in the past. Universities ignore evidence of historic rates being different because they are set in the idea of millions of years of geological evolution. They insist that we have rocks millions of years old to support this narrative.

Samples from the same rock can test to be vastly different ages.

Where there is no evidence of erosion between layers, those layers were quickly laid down upon each other; this is seen in areas of the Grand Canyon.

The Grand Canyon was formed by underwater deposition (see presentation for details).

Note: I've heard a few different ideas on this, all of which were superior to the mainstream science claim of underground layer building from subduction, based on slow plate movement, which then slowly emerged. End note.

See Kurt Wise, Paleontologist.

The Book of Peter prophesies that in the last days, people will say that the Lord isn't going to come because things are always going to be as they always have been. They deny the idea that the past was any different from the present.

Note: James Hutton's "Uniformitarian" theory, central to the old Earth claims, is a huge fulfillment of this scripture concerning false doctrines to be taught in the last days. Evolution is only 200 years old; it is an apocalyptic theory of doom. End note.

The Bible describes different epochs of time when very different things happened; God started and ended certain projects. At the time of Adam and Eve, it says they would have lived forever if they had not sinned; there were different conditions. Now, the sun won't burn forever, etc.

In the antediluvian (pre-flood) epoch, there were very different animals and plants on Earth. In Peter, it says that the world was destroyed. (The scriptures speak of a new heaven and a new earth several times.)

The Earth is still recovering from the flood; this can describe glacial history, etc.

Based on our current observations, the modern epoch can only describe the Earth back to a few hundred years after Noah's flood.

The Bible records historical events, but it (*usually) doesn't tell how they happened; we can study nature to find out how these events happened.

Note: That's a good point. The Bible is true, so we can find natural evidence of it, which will build faith in God. This is one of the big reasons God gave us the Bible! End note.

A great flood could have taken ocean animals and thrown them onto the land continents. The Cambrian explosion (an appearance of lots of marine animals which shows up almost out of nowhere) makes sense as the flood was about destroying ecosystems; we see a complex whole explosion of life (in the fossil record, indicating mass death); whenever you move up in the geological record, you see different ecosystems. The flood waters got higher and higher and destroyed more and more until they reached the top. In other words, all that life was already there, and we are just looking at the graveyard of all that life.

The placement of the next layer on the fossil record must have been quick; entire ecosystems and species were wiped out in the event of the worldwide flood.

At the time of the flood, the earth was filled with violence; it was not so at the time of creation. When we go to natural history museums, we see the animals of the time of violence on earth. (In the beginning there weren't carnivores.)



*Note: Right, there was no death before the fall of Adam, and it applies to ALL things (not just in Eden). Then we have a millennium where things will return to paradise, when there will **again** be no more death. (We look forward to a restoration of peace, not the first peace Earth has ever known.) Some references from the Bible demonstrating no death before the Fall include Gen. 3:17-20; Rom. 5:12-14; Rom. 8:21-22; & 1 Cor. 15:21-22, 26, 45. The Book of Mormon also teaches this doctrine in 2 Nephi 2:22. End note.*

Fossilization requires very special circumstances; if a coyote dies in the desert today, its body soon disappears. Fossilization is rare, yet we find dinosaur fossils all over the Earth.

Note: Rapid fossilization has been observed and occurs easily when conditions are met, including high pressure, water, mineralization, and high heat. Carbon-based fossils form easily, but quartz-based fossils (which most fossils are) require special conditions present at the flood. The flood is the great event that made the world's fossils! End note.

The rule is that there are no transitional forms; those forms remain the same in the next stages of the fossil record. When there are transitional forms, that's the exception rather than the rule.

Ark in the Darkness Documentary: Highlights & Commentary



The ark structure is ideal; large ships today have similar structures.

Only about 7000 animals would have to be on the ark.

The Hebrew flood word is "Mabul." It appears only twice: in the flood of Noah and in Psalm 29:10, which says God sat as king at the flood.

Gen. 6 has 60x repeated words like "all" and "every," showing Noah's flood was global.

A local flood couldn't last that long.

If the flood had been local, the ark would not have been needed, all the animals would not have needed to be on it, and Noah's family could have just walked away.

Note: If it were a local flood, the covenant never to repeat such would be violated repeatedly by now. Animals wouldn't need to board the ark. Hundreds of world legends wouldn't attest to the worldwide flood. Hundreds of pieces of geological evidence wouldn't suggest a worldwide flood (look at Universal Model Science's chapter on geological evidence for the flood). End note.

The judgment on mankind was great "on the earth," so it wasn't a local flood. (Note – the covenant was established with Noah because he was the last man standing.)

A mere local judgment in the past means that the future Jesus would be merely local. No, both are worldwide (according to the scriptures).

Note: The fire to come will also be universal. End note.

You can't find Eden because it's buried under 1000s of feet of sediment. The

pre-flood world was destroyed.

Mainstream scientists accept that there was a global flood on now dry Mars, but they refuse it for Earth, despite Earth being already mostly underwater. Earth is 70 percent covered in water.

Note: This refusal to admit a worldwide flood on Earth, despite the evidence of it in nature, must be motivated by atheism. Vindicating the Bible in such a big way would be unthinkable to establishment science. End note.

In phase 1 of the flood, the mid-ocean ridge bulges, water rises a mile, and a tsunami occurs as it erupts.

If trenches weren't so deep and some mountains less high, our world would all be underwater today.

Antonio Pellegrini, a Christian, came up with continental drift decades before Wegener. Antonio cited Genesis, which states that there was only one continent at the time of creation.

Mid-Atlantic ridges are scars from where the great deep opened.

Each large tsunami would bring another layer of sediment. These tsunamis could cover entire continents.

Dinosaurs are found in fossil beds with thousands of animals. There aren't erosion channels (indicating rivers); a powerful flood would have killed them.

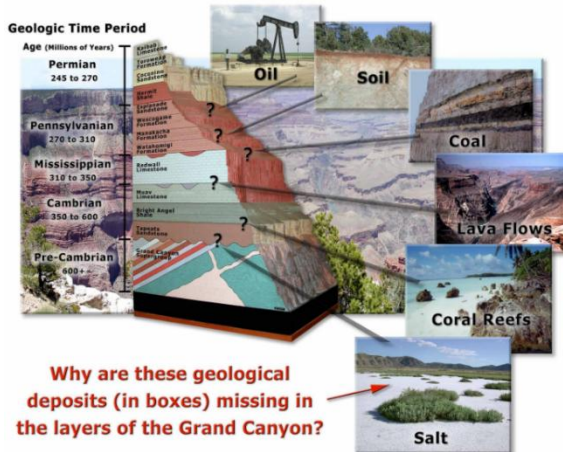
There are buried trees that span several layers of sediment supposedly millions of years old. Trees can't stay intact for millions of years; if they were buried a little at a time, they would decompose. The Grand Canyon layers could have been deposited in a mere year!

Note: The Grand Canyon layers are missing organic material between the layers, and diverse fossil life between the layers. These would be evident if the layers were deposited over large periods of time. 600 million years of deposition should reveal billions of plant and animal fossils, but they're not there! End note.

Grand Canyon - Missing Fossils



Grand Canyon - Missing Layers



(Images: Universal Model Science Textbooks)

Fossil trees are missing their root systems because they were transported in tsunamis. Being bottom-heavy, they sank bottom down and were buried, thus standing.

Sea creature fossils are mixed with land creatures; they all were swept together in the flood.



Earth is mainly made of water-formed sedimentary rock layers.

Bended and folded rock could only occur if the layers were soft and pliable at their formation. **Bottom layers still had to be saturated with water without time to dry out.**

Sedimentary layers span entire continents, showing they were formed simultaneously. Sediment from the east is found in the west.

Complete rapid burial is needed for fossilization, which suggests cataclysmic events. There are trillions of fossils, yet normally, dead things decompose into dust.

Note: A special environment had to be present for quartz-based rock to be formed, which is what most fossils are. Mere calcification is not what we are dealing with in the fossil record. Only the massive flood of Noah created the exact water-pressure-heat recipe to turn bones and trees into quartz-based rock. Universal Model Science textbooks have fascinating chapters on this and demonstrate the creation of a quartz-based petrified wood fossil in a laboratory. These experiments indicate that the flood was indeed very deep, to the tune of 5 miles! End note.

Water percolated into the flood sediment, bringing minerals needed for fossilization.

Note: Remember that massive amounts of sediment are being shot up from the 'fountains of the deep.' End note.

Wasp fossils are seen with open wings and legs in flight position - they were flying to escape and were trapped. We have fossils of fish-eating other fish. Fossilization was rapid and catastrophic!

All layers have saltwater creatures.

Asteroids causing dust and climate change death wouldn't bury the dinosaurs. The asteroid was invented 40 years ago when the previous theory didn't work.

Note: Many scientists are beginning to admit that flooding caused the extinction of the dinosaurs. Yep, it was Noah's flood! This enormous one-time event changed the world in ways we scarcely comprehend. The Universal Model Science textbooks contain many quotations of mainstream scientists making these admissions. End note.

Volcanism and water are what Genesis says happened in Noah's flood, killing all the animals via volcanic openings from the ocean floors. But secular humanists say it was a meteor impact.

Box turtles, ducks, and boa constrictors—all seven groups of animals—have been **found with the dinosaurs. Museums won't show modern animals in dinosaur displays.** They want you to think these animals didn't coexist, but that evolution occurred instead.

Soft tissue in dinosaur bones smelling of purification is a recent discovery that mainstream science doesn't want to get out. These dinosaur bones have elastic material, muscle tissue, and red blood cells on them. These can't be old, 100,000 years tops, yet these are supposed to be tens of millions of years old. Sixteen types of biogenic material are found on these dinosaur bones. *(Note: It's not just bacteria that got on the bone like some scoffers claim. End note.)* Collagen lasts .001% as long as evolution requires. Scientists publishing this get fired for promoting religious views, but it's just publishing scientific evidence.

Note: Evolution strikes again! If your findings contradict that narrative, they'll be buried until we 'emerge' from the dark age of evolution! End note.

Dragon legends are about the remaining dinosaurs that were hunted.

Science proves a genetic bottleneck of the human population, as we would see from Noah's family repopulating the earth.

There are about 200 flood traditions, very similar to the Bible account, with a family surviving on a boat from a flood sent by God. These traditions are even from places far from the ocean.

Genesis 1-11 takes place before mankind scattered, and people have legends of these shared events of creation, the flood, and then the tower of Babel.

The tower of Babel was a one-world government building project that God stopped by confusing the languages.

There's only one race; we are all from Adam. This inspires love for all.

Language families lead to dead ends, which contradicts the 'emerged' evolutionary language idea. Languages trace back to the time of the Tower of Babel.

At the time of the Tower of Babel, there were 70 nation groups. Today we have that many root languages.

People were surprised at the flood, and the second coming of Jesus will mirror this surprise. The flood was a judgment similar to what will come.

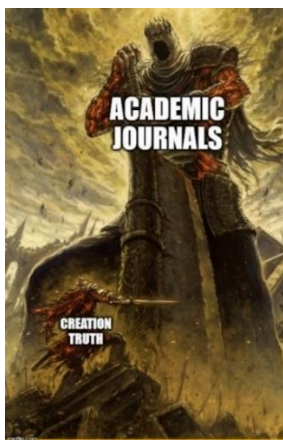
Public square teachings are against marriage and promote all forms of sexual deviation.

The Bible records predicted events that happened exactly as predicted. Jesus came to Earth at the only time all the prophecies about the Messiah could be fulfilled.

The sin of one man brought death to all. Sinlessness of one man brings life to all.

There was only 1 door into the ark, and there's only 1 way to salvation, which is Jesus Christ.

See Dr. John Baumgardner, Dr. Andrew Fabich, Dr. Gabriella Haynes, Dr. Mark Horstemeyer, Dr Charles Jackson, Dr. Terry Mortenson, Dr. Randall price, the Logos research Association, Dr. Andrew Selling, Dr. Carl Werner.



Scientist Proves Noah's Flood by Dr. Carl Werner on Genesis Apologetics - Highlights

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ekT6tBXhEoM>

All layers of the Geologic Column have saltwater creatures in them.

Evolution theory of the layers being far apart in time would require 18 worldwide floods, much harder to believe than 1 worldwide flood.

We see flat layer deposits worldwide, attesting of flood deposition.

There are modern animals in every layer of the Geologic Column!

There's saltwater animals in every layer of the Geologic Column.

The same species can have great variation. Evolutionists say some fossils of the same species are different species.

There are exact copies of the same fossil in different layers. Evolutionists give different names to these when they appear in different layers to make them appear to have changed into something different in the different layer. They're the same animal!

99% of animals in the Geologic Column are extinct. It's not evolution, it's just extinction. The other 1% are modern animals. Evolutionists say the rate of extinction is 99:1, and these findings show extinction, not evolution.

There were at least 150 fraudulent responses in the interviews he did with leaders of natural history museums etc. He enumerates them all in his video series, which he doesn't make money on, and which he has setup as a high school creationism class of several semesters.

Ask archeologists if they've seen animals looking like modern animals at their dinosaur fossil dig sites and they'll tell you yes all the time. They won't admit

finding modern animals at dinosaur fossil dig sites but they will admit finding animals that look just like modern animals!

Dr. Kent Hovind Creation Seminar 6: The Hovind Flood Theory – Highlights & Commentary

<https://youtu.be/JPUR8tEQQcA>

Evolution theory is an obstacle you encounter when teaching the gospel, so you ought to know how to overcome that obstacle.

In all of his work, Hovind has never seen an exception to the fact that the reason people hate the Bible is because they don't want to listen to God's laws due to their lust.

There's no scientific reason to accept evolution, and there's no scientific reason to reject the Bible; the only reason they reject the Bible is based on their lusts, their unwillingness to listen to God.

The Bible says the scoffers are dumb on purpose, willingly ignorant of how God made the heavens and how the Earth was standing in the water and out of the water. 2 Peter 3:5 reads, "For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water and in the water:" Thus we see that the two things that the scoffers are ignorant about are the creation and the flood.

They don't want to admit that God created the Earth; that would mean that He owns it and He makes the rules. They don't want to admit the flood because it means God has the authority to judge His creation.

Scoffers don't like the idea of a forthcoming judgment.

It's a serious problem when we pay people to not work because God cursed the ground for our sake. Work is one of the best things for you, it's a wonderful therapy. It's a good thing that God cursed the ground so that man would have to go out to work all day and come home tired at the end of the day. Otherwise, we would just sit around and think of ways to get in trouble. God's welfare plan is if you don't work, you don't eat. It reads, "if any would not work, neither should he eat." (2 Thes. 3:10)

Hovind did this with his kids- if they don't get their chores done, they don't

eat. You give them a list of things to do in the morning, and when it's all done, they get to come to the meal. He only had to do that once to get their attention.

Note: Don't blow up about this; he is not suggesting that you starve your kids; nobody is going hungry. He's just trying to follow God's word and use effective training methods to set his kids up with lifelong habits of success. The parent who has guidelines like this helps a child understand that the child can do good things. In today's culture of not driving a child to school without a snack bag and our almost universal cultural addiction to processed drug-like foods, this is hard for us to understand. We have lost our view of what it means to have a healthy relationship with food. Furthermore, back in the day, self-discipline was expected, and parents were the ones to teach it. Getting everything you want when you want it isn't natural. A parent's job isn't always popular, but it's the most important job for any society and for any individual child. End note.

The flood left evidence of a miracle. If God just killed all the wicked, it would not leave the kind of record/evidence which the flood did. This is why God did the worldwide flood, so there would be plenty of evidence left behind that this judgement happened (which implies that judgment can and will come again when we earn it).

God telling Noah to build the boat gave everyone warning time.

It probably never rained before the flood (as evidenced by there being no rainbow before the flood (Gen. 9:11-17)) Noah said that something was going to happen that they had never seen happen before, and today, we're doing the same thing - we are saying that Christ and the angels are going to come down out of heaven, which we have never seen before.

Note: It is likely that mists from the ground could have watered the plants in mists before the rain came. End note.

When it rains heat is released, and if it rained enough to cover Mount Everest, the heat would cook the world; we are not claiming that it rained to cover Mount Everest; Hovind says Everest was probably not there when the flood happened.

Note: Most agree that several mountains were formed in the flood. But we still have very deep waters, likely 5 miles deep covering earth. Universal Model Science gives overwhelming evidence that the fossils were formed in a very deep flood. And not much rain is needed when we know about the abundant waters beneath Earth's crust. End note.

The fountains of the deep supplied most water, most of the water of the flood.

Note: true, rain from all of the atmosphere would only cover Earth in about an inch of water. End note.

Psalms 24:1-2 says the earth was founded upon the seas. It reads, “1 A Psalm of David. The earth is the LORD'S, and the fulness thereof; the world, and they that dwell therein. 2 For he hath founded it upon the seas, and established it upon the floods.”

Psalms 33:7 says, “He gathereth the waters of the sea together as an heap: he layeth up the depth in storehouses.”

Psalms 136 says he stretched Earth above the waters. It reads, “To him that stretched out the earth above the waters: for his mercy endureth for ever.”

Gen. 7:17-24 speak of the waters prevailing upon the Earth during the flood. It reads, “17 And the flood was forty days upon the earth; and the waters increased, and bare up the ark, and it was lift up above the earth. 18 And the waters prevailed, and were increased greatly upon the earth; and the ark went upon the face of the waters. 19 And the waters prevailed exceedingly upon the earth; and all the high hills, that were under the whole heaven, were covered. 20 Fifteen cubits upward did the waters prevail; and the mountains were covered. 21 And all flesh died that moved upon the earth, both of fowl, and of cattle, and of beast, and of every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth, and every man: 22 All in whose nostrils was the breath of life, of all that was in the dry land, died. 23 And every living substance was destroyed which was upon the face of the ground, both man, and cattle, and the creeping things, and the fowl of the heaven; and they were destroyed from the earth: and Noah only remained alive, and they that were with him in the ark. 24 And the waters prevailed upon the earth an hundred and fifty days.”

Job 38:8 says the Earth was born like a baby. It reads, “Or who shut up the sea with doors, when it brake forth, as if it had issued out of the womb?”

Note: It may be a reference to flood waters or creation waters. End note.

Note: Latter-day Saint Commentary: Interestingly, Joseph Smith taught that the Earth was formed from parent Earths. End note.

Earth broke at the time of the flood; the scars are fault lines and plate boundaries.

Dr. Hovind doesn't like Pangea theory; he says the shapes fitting are a

coincidence of water level. He says the fossils are everywhere, not just in the lines of connecting continents. He says all are still connected when the water is gone. He points out some shrinking of Africa turning of continents and missing central America to make the continents fit together.

Note: I promote Pangea. All the continental crust was together, not just oceanic crust joining it. The oceanic crust formed near flood time. It's also likely we have always had ocean, not just ocean from the flood. Also, the continental crust and oceanic crust are clearly different, and I say continental was made in the creation, whereas oceanic developed in the flood as the continents separated. Further, continents aren't going up and down in the water, water levels remain fairly constant, and there are no maps of vertical uplift because it's not happening. For example, the height of Mount Everest remains constant. End note.

There are no reversed polarity magnetic reversals! The textbook diagrams don't represent reality. It's likely flipped rocks and some areas with greater and lesser magnetism. Earth's magnetic field is getting weaker. It used to be too strong for life, even recently. This is an issue for evolution, so they claim these are magnetic reversals.

Supposed magnetic reversals are old cracks from water rushing where basalt broke. No magnetism can exist with great heat! Water entering the crack is locked in a stronger magnetic field.

Note: This is an important point as to why there isn't a magnetic iron core in a molten earth: heat destroys magnetism! End note.

Walt Brown, author of the creation textbook "In the Beginning" (available free at Creationism.org), proposes that continents were, in fact, together before the flood, and there were large bodies of water between land areas. Here are some points of his **"Hydroplate Theory:"**

Brown says there were water fountains over 20 miles high producing torrential rains.

Brown says muddy sediments were thrown up by the fountains, and these sediments made the fossils.

Brown says the mid-oceanic ridge was formed when a hydrofountain crack widened and exposed. Underlying rock, then without the cap, crust rock came upward (pressures were released).

Brown says hydroplanes moved 45mph until encountering resistance, and then buckling occurred to form mountains and ridges, which is why they are along these plate boundaries.

Brown says a huge lake spilled into the area of the Grand Canyon, forming the canyon.

Brown says there was no canopy of water firmament around Earth

Note: I think the Grand Canyon sediments were deposited in the flood, and then an earthquake ripped the hardened sediment open, creating the canyon. However, this water carving theory may be a possibility, though the canyon walls appear rigid rather than smoothed from water erosion, and one side of the canyon is much higher than the other, indicating seismic activity. End note.

Scientists studying a massive canyon on Mars claimed that it formed in weeks due to melting water from a crater that washed out the canyon quickly.

So here they are saying Mars, the planet where there's no visible water, had a massive canyon carved out by the water, but that here on Earth, where there is visible water and lots of it, it's impossible Earth's great canyon could have been quickly carved out by a large amount of water.

There's rock scrunched like an accordion - this would have formed **when the sediment was still soft**.

Hovind suggests that the oceanic crust was subducted into magma during the flood.

Note: Crustal interactions would create enough frictional heat to liquify rock without a deep magma ocean (which no one has ever seen) to melt the rock. End note.

There are only a few thousand years worth of mud in the oceans. Mainstream science says that it's because the ocean floor is being recycled. More likely it's due to the youthful nature of the oceans!

The mountains are eroding, so why aren't they smaller by now if the Earth is so old?

Hovind says there is strong evidence for an ice age based on terminal and lateral moraines, isostatic rebound, and kettle lakes.

Mammoths are found frozen, standing up with food still in their teeth. In one year, 20,000 mammoth tusks were extracted from the ground. Estimates are that 5 million mammoths perished in one catastrophe. There's evidence of mammoths living in a warm climate, as other longhaired animals are known to do, and a great storm came, perhaps in the aftermath of the flood cataclysm, and killed them quickly, standing where they were.

Under 1,000 ft of permanently frozen ground, drillers found a 300 ft tall tree

standing up. This was in Bero, Alaska, where there are no trees.

Inverse square laws apply when you're dealing with light forces, gravity, and girls. (The closer you get, the stronger the attraction, the further, the less)

Dr. Hovind has only been home 8 Sundays in 14 years.

Stonehenge was built to worship the Sun during summer solstice, but today, it does not line up due to the Earth's wobble and changing tilt. It's the same as the temple of Amun Ra; it was built to worship the sun during summer solstice, but it does not line up now. Dr. Hovind suggests that the poles of the earth were once habitable for farmland because the Lord made the Earth to be inhabited.

Note: He asks how all the craters on the moon got there because we never see anything hitting the Moon (true). He doesn't answer the question, but here I will. The answer is that most of them are water implosion geyser craters, not impact craters. Universal Model Science has a lot of great information on this. It explains enigmas like the many double bullseye craters. End note.

Hovind says the Earth used to be much more magnetic and that this would have drawn ice comets with iron to the poles. Hovind theorizes that a dump of snow on the poles cracked the Earth, releasing The fountains of the deep and that the spreading ice caused the glacial effects that we see and the mammoths to be frozen standing up.

Note: Another theory of how plates broke is a near flyby comet, which threw off the balance of the gravitational & centrifugal forces of Earth's spin. See Universal Model Science.

There was massive runoff causing vast erosion, like the Grand Canyon.

Note: It seems more likely that the Grand Canyon was split open by an earthquake after the sediments were deposited by the flood due to its jagged edges than smooth, but massive water erosion surely was at work in many places. End note.

Genesis 10 mentions it being the time of Peleg when the earth was divided. Jochan his brother is mentioned, whose name means shortened, as in the lifespans were shortened around that time. There was likely atmospheric change after the flood resulting in shorter lifespans. Today there is more carbon dioxide in the atmosphere, shortening lifespans. By the time of Peleg, this shortening of lifespan took effect.

There are massive pockets of oil and massive fossil graveyards. Coal is from plants being buried; oil is from animals being buried.

Note: I don't know that this distinction is so clear. End note.

Mountain ranges and ocean basins form from shifting plates.

Craters on the moon and Mars may be from craters of impact from Earth when the fountains of the deep of the earth were opened and rocks came flying up out of the Earth and beyond Earth's atmosphere. Walt brown thinks that the water on Mars came from Earth when the fountains of the deep broke open, and he thinks that the craters on the moon came from rocks launched out of Earth.

Note: Or these are water fountain implosion craters rather than impact craters from water. Thus the craters would be native to those spheres, not from Earth. I think it is extremely unlikely that rock or water from Earth would make it to the moon, much less other planets. Universal Model Science has great evidence on this in the Hydroplanet Model chapter of volume 1. End note.

The canopy of water over the Earth would have broken to fall as rain, and that this would change the atmosphere, and more sunlight would get in (leading to more radiation and aging), etc.

Note: Canopy speculations are interesting but we can't test them today, so it remains a mystery. See my comments on this point earlier in my notes on seminar 3, including a link to a man who see the ice canopy in vision. End note.

Flood waters rose up for 150 days and people would have been looking for higher ground throughout that rather than just all being wiped out in the early stages. He says this is why we could be seeing less human fossils than animal fossils.

Note: It seems it could have happened faster as far as wiping people out goes with those fountains opening, sending miles long plumes of water which would come crashing down as massive flood waters. As the old primary song goes, "the rains came down and the floods came up!" Those floods came up out of the ground, it wasn't just rainwater piling up! End note.

They're finding massive pieces of ice in space etc., water everywhere in space.

Note: There's tons of evidence on this topic in Universal Model Science. Studying the water content of other celestial bodies is a particularly fun topic as it gives clues to Earth's formation and flood. End note.

There's coal under the ice at the South Pole. Admiral Byrd saw palm leaves at the South Pole. They found plant-eating dinosaurs in northern Alaska, and today there are no plants there. Northern animals got frozen standing up because they were caught with a deep snow drift.

People think mammoths are designed for cold weather because of their long hair, but this is not so; we see many jungle animals with long hair. Mammoths were living in a tropical area, and then a massive snowstorm happened that they had not experienced anything like before, and they were caught and buried standing up in it.

Hovind suggests an ice age that happened at the beginning of the flood. Some say the ice age caused the flood, others say the flood caused the ice age (*note-and others say there was no ice age*). Hovind says the ice age would last several hundred years after the flood. Cold air hitting the warm air would cause it to rain, this is what induced 40 days of rain at the flood.

People didn't want to carry around heavy tools, they made tools on the spot when they found a herd of animals and left them there when they left; they were not unsophisticated tools due to a lack of intelligence, they were just in a hurry.

Joshua 6 talks about the Lord shaking the Earth, a massive storm, and the fountains of the Earth being broke open in one day. We also read in Genesis that the fountains were all opened in one day.

The dump of ice on the poles caused the Earth to crack. The stronger magnetic field at that time would have caused these incoming comets of ice to go to the poles.

The Bible says all the high hills were covered, this was not a local flood, it was worldwide!

Note: Here are a few reasons the flood was worldwide: 1. It was a judgment on all the Earth.

2. It was a baptism by immersion.

3. Other local floods would violate God's covenant to not flood the Earth again.

4. Noah was used to carry on the covenant as the only one left.

5. The animals were brought since everything else was being wiped out.

6. Hundreds of geological evidences of the flood are found worldwide (see the Universal Model Science flood chapter.) End note.

Earth could be covered in water easily if it were leveled out.

Note: That's true, but we don't even need that when we know about the vast amounts of water under the crust. End note.

There are petrified clams on mountain tops in the closed position indicate **rapid** death and burial as they usually open when they die.

Soft tissue fossilizations include eggs, jellyfish, and the arm of an octopus. Very special conditions are required for fossilization, especially for soft tissue fossilization.

Note: Darwin claimed that no tissue wholly soft could be fossilized. He was wrong. End note.

British Columbia's mountains were pressed from the ends, which wrinkled them up like an accordion.

They found an 80-foot-long whale skeleton preserved with diatomaceous earth. Diatoms are usually preserved at a much slower rate, so in this instance, we have a massive deposit of diatoms. A whale at the bottom of the ocean will typically dissolve in a matter of months; even the bones will disappear.

Fossilized animals trapped in diatomaceous earth have their gills and fins extended as though they were terrified at a catastrophic event that killed them.

During the first few months of the flood, the dead animals would settle out. There are fewer human fossils found because humans are smarter and would avoid drowning until the last possible minute. Things buried on the top in very shallow soil won't fossilize. We do have some 4,000 sets of human remains found.

Note: I think the flood was so deep that anything could have fossilized, but perhaps people made some rafts to avoid their inevitable doom a little longer. End note.

Moving water forms multiple layers of strata simultaneously and higher levels can even be older than lower levels.

Turbidity currents cause animals and other things in flood waters to be sorted. Swirling eddies of water can explain why we have animal bones mixed up

sometimes. Fossil graveyards are very common all over the planet. We find concentrations of fossils like logs in a river jam.

There are 800,000 million fossil skeletons of vertebrate animals.

There are iguana skeletons in a Belgium coal mine extending through 100 vertical feet of rock.

There are many examples of things that have been petrified in less than 100 years. Hovind gives many examples of petrified things: petrified wood, a petrified hammer, a petrified dog in a tree, a petrified foot in a boot, a petrified hat, and a petrified crayon.

They were going to bury a man's wife next to him 14 years after his death, and when they dug the hole, water came flowing in, so they didn't bury her there. They were worried about the man being in the water, so they dug him out and found that he was petrified.

One woman did not know she was pregnant, and the baby in her died, and she was petrified. It was later seen on an x-ray when she reported pain.

Acorns were left in a bucket of water for a year and turned to stone.

For centuries, people have known how to make petrified rock out of wood so that it will last longer.

Note: I'm not aware of anyone making petrified wood experimentally other than experiments done in Universal Model Science, particularly when it comes to making quartz fossils, not just calcium carbonate. End note.

Note: Organisms can fossilize in hot springs, etc., today, but they are only calcium carbonate-based, which involves little to no pressure; these are never quartz-based, which requires hypertherm (a combination of water, pressure, and heat), which was uniquely present at Earth's creation and the flood. End note.

If there is any sorting in the fossil record, it is better explained by a flood.

Cavitation is a process wherein moving water sucks rock off of a wall quickly.

Hydraulic plucking involves the abrasion of moving water. The moving water has materials like rocks and trees, which act as sandpaper to quickly erode through solid rock by abrasion.

Liquefaction can involve pressing sand grains and relieving pressure. You can test this by standing in the sand on a beach. Stand knee-deep in the water. The high part of the wave weighs more than the low part of the wave because there is more water there. The high part of the wave pushes down on the sand under your feet. When the low part comes past you, the pressure is relieved, and sand grains start popping up off the bottom as water squeezes out of them.

In the worldwide flood you would have a 200 ft tide every 6 hours 25 minutes. Raising and releasing pressure repeatedly would cause sorting.

One person filled an empty aquarium from the bottom by putting a bladder with many holes in it attached to a hose at the bottom. On top of that he put rock, concrete, dead fish, reptiles, mammals, and as it filled these items sorted themselves by density. Birds mammals reptiles amphibians fish was the order (remember acronym FARM). **They didn't evolve in this order like they claim, rather they sort in that order.**

In certain conditions, less dense layers can be covered by more dense layers. This occurs in a sand plume when a denser layer breaks at the top.

Ayers Rock in Australia is probably caused by a sand flow formed by the flood. The tunnels all over these formations are air coming out.

Note: Or water coming out! The Universal Model hydroplanet chapter shows many of these; these pipes/fountains of water exiting the deep! End note.

An earthquake can shake the ground and makes it like soup. Things sink into it as we have seen with modern disasters of buildings sinking into the ground etc. due to liquefaction.

Clams are found at the bottom layers of the fossil record because that's their habitat. Birds are found at the top because that's their habitat. The bird flies around till he runs out of gas, then he's buried; but the clam is already at the bottom and would be first to be buried.

Sorting by intelligence is another idea because the clams would not have figured out how to avoid burial, and hence, they are at the bottom. Sorting by mobility is another idea. Sorting by density is another idea; of course, shells are heavier than bird feathers.

Note: Sorting by the rapidity of reproduction is another possibility. Those who reproduce in largest quantities would have first layer, filling it up fastest.

*Hence mammals would be at the top. Thanks to Lance Weaver for this idea.
End note.*

Genesis says all the mountains were covered, and then the water was assuaged or dropped down.

Psalm 104:5-6 says the waters stood above the mountains. It reads, “5 Who laid the foundations of the earth, that it should not be removed for ever. 6 Thou coveredst it with the deep as with a garment: the waters stood above the mountains.”

If the flood was only local God would not have told Noah to build a huge boat and put all the animals on it to save them and stay in it for a year, instead **he would have just told Noah to move!**

Note: As mentioned earlier, other reasons for a worldwide rather than a local flood are as follows:

-If the flood was local, other local floods would violate God's covenant to not flood the Earth again.

-God wouldn't have to establish the covenant with Noah if Noah wasn't the only person left.

-A local flood wouldn't have wiped out all wickedness from Earth.

-The Bible says all life on Earth died.

-Why would Noah have to bring all the animals if it were a local flood?

-Why would hundreds of world legends talk about a flood covering the whole Earth?

Psalm 104:7 says at thy rebuke they fled, referring to the water. “It says, At thy rebuke they fled; at the voice of thy thunder they hasted away.”

Verse 8: the water goes down to the valleys that the Lord founded for them. It says, “They go up by the mountains; they go down by the valleys unto the place which thou hast founded for them.”

When mountains lifted up, water rushed into new low places.

Large amounts of water trapped under the crust settled down after the flood.

Massive rock formations came out of the ground.

Nearly all mountain ranges follow the coastlines, probably because they formed at the same time during the flood.

See the Guadalupe River flood damages.

Bent rock layers indicate the rock was bent while it was soft because bending hard rock makes shattering fracture lines all along it. All the **layers that are bent were all soft mud at the same time, they are not different age layers.**

On the sides of Grand Canyon there are sinkholes where water flows down. Eventually this will wash out to make another side canyon.

After Noah got off the ark, it is possible that not as much percentage of the world was underwater, and this could explain why there are kangaroos in Australia. Kangaroos could have hopped to Australia from the mainland in Turkey. Less aggressive animals would be pushed to the migration fringe, preferring to run rather than fight. While these peaceful animals like kangaroos and wombats were migrating further away, the ice caps were melting, and ocean levels were rising. Then Australia became an island.

If you lowered the ocean 60 ft Russia and Alaska would be connected. If you raise the ocean 10%, the eastern half of America except some of the Appalachians would be underwater.

Water between Vietnam and Australia is very shallow, about 100 ft.

If the Earth was the size of a one-foot globe, you would not be able to find Mount Everest. Globes with bumps for mountains are extremely exaggerated. If you shrunk the Earth down to the size of a cue ball to play pool, the Earth will be rounder and smoother than the cue ball. A 5-mile mountain on an 8,000 mi Earth is insignificant.

In 1964, there was an earthquake in Alaska that dropped neighborhoods down 40 to 60 ft.

Mount St. Helens blew enough mud out that everyone on earth could have a ton of it.

There is a place called The Little Grand Canyon because it's a 140th essentially scale model of the Grand Canyon, and it was formed in a flood!

A 1000 ft. wide 140 ft. deep channel was carved into the ground in a few hours. When dams break, natural or otherwise, things erode very quickly.

Mudflow from Mount St. Helens is stratified and people wonder why because we know it was all in one occasion. This is because **moving mud**

automatically stratifies. Get a jar of dirt with water shake it up it'll settle into layers quickly.

In the aftermath of Mount St Helens many of the trees in the mud flow and spirit lake stand upright.

Hovind says many of the trees from Mount St. Helens in Spirit Lake are beginning to petrify.

Note: I don't think they are beginning to petrify; I think they are decaying and don't think we have the correct environment for fossilization; I don't think there are any in-process fossils (perhaps other than the occasional weird petrification of something); I think the wide-scale flood petrification was a very unique recipe that we had not seen in modern times, involving lots of pressure from deep waters, lots of heat from violent crustal movement, etc. End note.

We have several petrified trees which are broken into log-like small pieces. When you cut a tree down it doesn't break like that, so it must have been standing up petrified and then it fell over and was brittle and broke!

There have been many experiments where they have made coal in a matter of hours.

Note: This is right. The reason we don't make oil in the lab for commercial use is that it's cheaper to pull it out of the ground. However, the fact that these materials can be made from planets and organic matter in a short amount of time is now a proven fact. End note.

During the flood, there would have been large log mats the size of Texas where insects could survive.

The debris trails would have made layers of coal.

One coal mine had dinosaur tracks on the ceiling, so the dinosaurs marched around on this stuff as it formed.

All of the biomass on the Earth today, if it were made into coal, would not make as much coal as we see in the ground; this suggests that before the flood, there was much more biomass than we see today. Hovind suggests that there were no oceans before the flood and that where we see ocean today were forests.

Note: I don't believe it is necessary to have the whole Earth without an ocean

in order to provide all the biomass for the coal formations, perhaps just a more fruitful environment in general than we see today. End note.

Human artifacts have been found in coal. A gold chain, a bell, a carved tablet, an iron pot, a shoe in Nevada, etc.

Genesis 8:2-3 says the flood waters were going and returning. It reads, "**2 The fountains also of the deep and the windows of heaven were stopped, and the rain from heaven was restrained; 3 And the waters returned from off the earth continually: and after the end of the hundred and fifty days, the waters were abated.**"

Layers would be deposited; soft sediment would be pushed together in places, erosion would take off top layers in places, unconformities would form with new layers deposited on top of all that, etc.

Noah stayed in the ark 13 months, 7 months after he had landed. He stayed in because it was so muddy, the waters were still coming and going, there was no food out there, and there was nothing to build a house with.

Genesis says the waters decreased continually. It is probable that the ice caps retreated.

See the book Noah to Abram: The Turbulent Years: New Light on Ice Age, Cave Man, Stone Age, the Old Kingdoms by Erich A. Von Fange.

The Earth being divided in the days of Peleg many see as the continents dividing; Hovind sees it as water levels rising which divides land areas; some see it as a geographical survey to divide land ownership; others see it as language confusion after the Tower of Babel.

Note: I see it as the continents dividing, and I think most creationists do. Here's Genesis 10:25 on the Earth being divided: "And unto Eber were born two sons: the name of one was Peleg; for in his days was the earth divided; and his brother's name was Joktan." End note.

Note: Latter-day Saint Commentary: There is also a modern revelation about how it'll come back together at some point, so it had to break apart sometime. Here is the passage: "He shall command the great deep, and it shall be driven back into the north countries, and the islands shall become one land; and the land of Jerusalem and the land of Zion shall be turned back into their own place, and the earth shall be like as it was in the days before it was divided" (D&C 133:23–24). End note.

The melting ice made oceans deeper, wider, and colder, and increased CO₂, shortening life spans.

Note: I'm not sure an increase in CO₂ would shorten lifespans, but lifespans were shortened. End note.

Underwater cities are found in many places. Naturally, the water there didn't used to be so deep. In the Black Sea underwater cities were found under 150 feet of water.

Whenever you put gas in your car, think about how that gas was made by formations from the flood.

Whenever you use electricity, which is likely powered by coal, think about how that coal came from the pre-flood world. We are living off of trees from the Garden of Eden! Satan is taking what God intended to remind us of the flood and is twisting it around as evidence for evolution instead!

Scripture says Jesus' soon coming to the world will be sudden like the flood was.

Remembering the Flood: The Accurate Record of Genesis and the Echoes in Gilgamesh (Issues of Applying Evolutionary Principles to Anthropology, Similarities, & Differences) by Dr. Robert Wright

<https://www.afloodofhope.com/post/remembering-the-flood-the-accurate-record-of-genesis-and-the-echoes-in-gilgamesh>

When we look closely at the ancient records that have come down to us, we find striking common elements between the Flood account in Genesis and the flood story preserved in the Epic of Gilgamesh. These shared details are not accidental. They point back to a real historical event that both traditions remember, even though one has been preserved with far greater accuracy than the other.

The biblical record stands as the accurate historical account. It is a revealed record given by God of events that actually took place. The Epic of Gilgamesh, by contrast, is a corrupted account. It retains some proximity to the Flood, yet it was shaped after the confounding of languages at the Tower of Babel. Once the languages were confused and the peoples scattered, the

oral renderings of those earlier events began to change. Details were altered, motives were reinterpreted, and the one true God was replaced by a council of quarreling deities. What we read in the Mesopotamian tablets is therefore a derived tradition, modified over time, not the original and pure record.

Common Elements That Point to a Shared History

Both accounts tell of a great flood sent to destroy nearly all of mankind. In each story a favored man is warned in advance and told to build a large vessel. Animals are taken aboard so that life may continue. The boat eventually comes to rest on a mountain. Birds are released to test whether the waters have gone down. After leaving the vessel the survivor offers a sacrifice, and the divine response that follows sets the stage for a new beginning for humanity. These parallels are too specific and too structural to be dismissed as coincidence. They reflect a shared memory of the same catastrophic judgment.

Alexander Heidel, in his careful comparative study, observed that the Flood narratives provide “the most remarkable parallels between the Old Testament and the entire corpus of cuneiform inscriptions from Mesopotamia.” In the Standard Babylonian version of the Epic, Utnapishtim recounts how “Six days and seven nights came the wind and flood, the storm flattening the land. When the seventh day arrived, the storm was pounding... the sea calmed, the whirlwind fell still, the flood stopped.” Birds are then sent out in succession. Genesis records a parallel sequence of divine warning, vessel construction, preservation of life, mountain landing, release of birds, and post-flood sacrifice (Genesis 6–9). Scholars such as Kenneth Kitchen have noted a series of basic general similarities that suggest a definite relationship between the traditions, even while highlighting the many detailed differences.

Importantly, earlier Mesopotamian flood texts, such as the fragmentary Nippur Flood Tablet (associated with the Sumerian Eridu Genesis tradition and dating to roughly the early second millennium BC or earlier), show even closer correspondence to the biblical account in key details of the divine announcement and the command to build the vessel. Hermann Hilprecht noted that this earlier version “agrees most remarkably with the biblical story” and differs fundamentally from the later Nineveh versions of the Gilgamesh flood narrative. Such earlier instances stand nearer to the pure historical core shared with Genesis. This pattern further reinforces the common origin model: the original event and its accurate memory stand behind both traditions, while later elaborations in the full Epic of Gilgamesh display progressive corruption and mythological accretion. It undermines the derivative model that would make Genesis a late borrowing from the more elaborate and polytheistic Gilgamesh form.



Nippur Flood Tablet

Differences That Reveal Corruption

Yet the differences are just as instructive. Genesis presents a consistent monotheistic picture. The Flood comes because of human wickedness and violence. The ark is given precise dimensions and is seaworthy in design. The account ends with a clear covenant and the sign of the rainbow. The Gilgamesh version, by comparison, features many gods who argue among themselves. The reason for the flood is often linked to noise or overpopulation rather than moral corruption. The boat is described as roughly cubical. The timeline of the storm itself is compressed to roughly a week, and the overall tone is more dramatic and less morally coherent. These changes are exactly what we would expect once the pure memory of the event had been filtered through generations of oral transmission after Babel and then recast in a polytheistic culture.

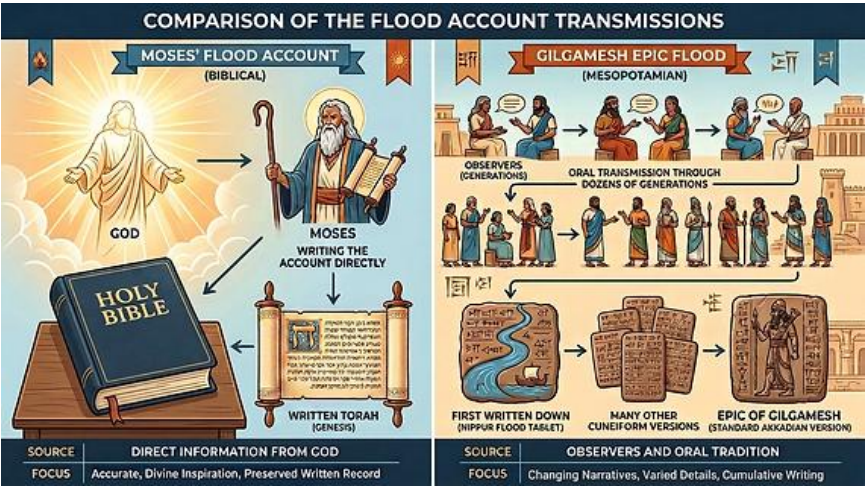
The Problems of Applying Evolutionary Principles to Anthropology

A serious problem arises when evolutionary principles are applied to anthropology and the study of these ancient texts. That approach assumes that human culture and religion develop from the simple and primitive toward the more complex and refined. Under that model the older Mesopotamian tablets are treated as the source, and Genesis is classified as a later adaptation. Manuscript age is equated with historical priority. Shared elements are explained only by literary borrowing rather than by a common real event followed by divergent transmission. Polytheism is assumed to be earlier, and monotheism is treated as a later intellectual achievement. Oral tradition is viewed as inherently unstable, and the possibility of divine revelation is ruled out from the start.



Epic of Gilgamesh

This method produces a closed circle. Because only naturalistic explanations are allowed, the biblical claim to be a revealed record is dismissed before the evidence is even weighed. Egyptologist Kenneth Kitchen has pointed out the methodological flaw: “The common assumption that the Hebrew account is simply a purged and simplified version of the Babylonian legend (applied also to the Flood stories) is fallacious on methodological grounds. In the Ancient Near East, the rule is that simple accounts or traditions may give rise (by accretion and embellishment) to elaborate legends, but not vice versa.” The result of the evolutionary approach has shaped many textbooks and popular presentations that present Gilgamesh as the original flood story and Genesis as a theological rewrite. In doing so they reverse the true order of things.



Revelation Versus Derived Tradition

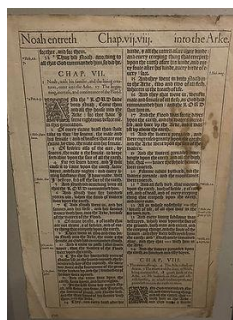
A more appropriate approach begins with the recognition that the biblical account, though written later in its final form, is not a derived human composition in the same sense. It is a revealed record of actual events. God is

the ultimate source. The human authors transmit what is true. The chronological priority of a clay tablet does not establish the priority of the account's origin or its superior accuracy. A corrupted oral tradition written down earlier can still be less reliable than a later written revelation that preserves the original facts.



Torah: Genesis 7

In this light the Epic of Gilgamesh is the derived record. It retains recognizable cores of the real Flood because those events truly happened and were remembered by the survivors and their descendants. Yet it has been modified through polytheistic reinterpretation, narrative embellishment, and the linguistic and cultural drift that followed the confusion of languages. Nozomi Osanai, after detailed comparison of the accounts, concludes that both traditions descend from a common origin rooted in a historical event, yet “the flood account in the Epic is the story which lost historical accuracy and was distorted, whereas the Genesis Flood account is the accurate historical record of the Flood event.” The biblical account remains the accurate historical benchmark. The shared elements confirm a common origin in real history. The differences display the expected corruption of human tradition once it is separated from the authoritative revealed Word. Earlier, simpler Mesopotamian fragments that stand closer to Genesis only strengthen this conclusion.



1611 King James Bible: Genesis 7

Hope in the True Record

This understanding fits the broader biblical picture of the early post-Flood world. There was a real global judgment. There was a real dispersion at Babel. And from that point the multiplied languages and cultures carried distorted memories of the same foundational events. The pure record was preserved by revelation so that we might know the truth of what God has done and place our hope in the One who judges righteously and still offers mercy.

References

George, A. (2003). *The Babylonian Gilgamesh epic: Introduction, critical edition and cuneiform texts*. Oxford University Press.

Heidel, A. (1949). *The Gilgamesh Epic and Old Testament parallels*. University of Chicago Press. (2nd ed., 1963).

Hilprecht, H. V. (1910). *The earliest version of the Babylonian deluge story and the temple library of Nippur*. University of Pennsylvania.

Kitchen, K. A. (1977). *The Bible in its world: The Bible and archaeology today*. Paternoster Press. See also Kitchen's discussions in *On the Reliability of the Old Testament* (Eerdmans, 2003).

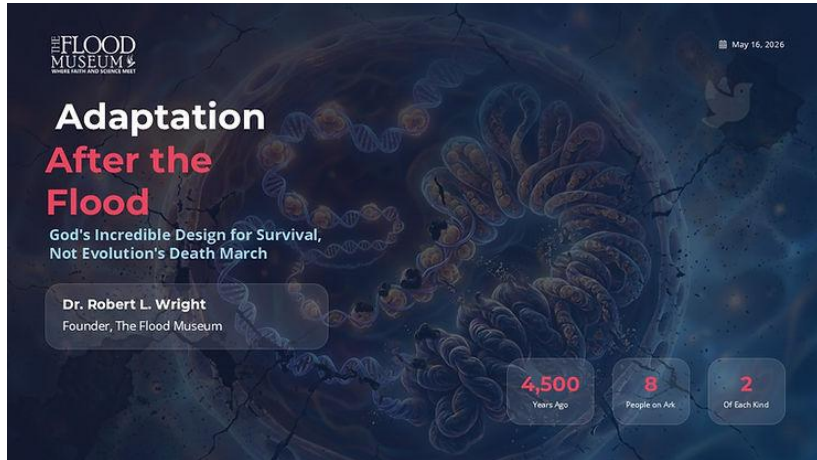
Osanai, N. (2005). *A comparative study of the flood accounts in the Gilgamesh Epic and Genesis*. Creation Ministries International.

Adaptation After the Flood by Dr. Robert Wright

<https://www.afloodofhope.com/post/adaptation-after-the-flood>

(Dr. Robert Wright: Dr. Bob, a Latter-day Saint creation advocate, was a Nuclear Engineer on submarines in the US Navy. He received his Master's Degree in Theology and his Ph.D. in Biblical Studies. His area of study was the synthesis of faith and science, using the Biblical Flood as a model. He is the author of numerous books including *A Flood of Hope: It's OK to Believe* and *Satan's War with God*. With his wife Carol, he is the founder of The Learning Institute Foundation and The Flood Museum. See his website AFloodOfHope.com.)

Dr. Wright gave a presentation "Adaptation After the Flood" at the recent (5/16/2026) Creation Science Conference in Salt Lake City, Utah. This conference was sponsored by Truth Seekers Foundation and Fossils and Faith. A written summary of the presentation is offered here.



God's Ingenious Design for Survival, Not Evolution's Death March

When Noah swung open the massive door of the Ark, pairs of every kind God had preserved stepped out into a world utterly transformed by the global Flood. Muddy landscapes stretched as far as the eye could see. Climates were shifting rapidly. Food sources had changed dramatically. An ice age was dawning. How could these animals possibly survive and spread across every continent in roughly 4,500 years? The answer lies not in blind, chaotic evolution over millions of years. Instead, it lies in the sophisticated adaptation mechanisms our loving Creator built into every kind long before the waters rose.

The Post-Flood World

THE FLOOD MUSEUM
BIBLICAL HISTORY AND SCIENCE

What Happened After the Flood?

- ✓ **Noah opens the Ark door** - Animals emerge into a transformed world with new climates and an approaching ice age.
- ✓ How did they **survive and spread** across the earth in just ~4,500 years?
- ✓ Answer: **Built-in adaptation, not evolution**. Pre-loaded genetic variability enabled rapid diversification.

Key Question

The post-Flood world presented **extreme challenges**:

- New climates and environments
- Reduced genetic diversity
- Need for rapid adaptation



~4,500
Years Ago

New
World

This is the story of divine foresight and mercy, not a death-driven struggle for survival.

Evolution vs. Adaptation: Two Very Different Processes

Modern evolutionary theory proposes that all life descended from a single common ancestor through random genetic mutations and natural selection operating across billions of years. It demands the constant addition of brand-new genetic information to invent new body plans, organs, and kinds of creatures.

Evolution vs Adaptation

Comparison



Evolution (Proposed)

Common ancestor + mutations

- **Common ancestor** + random mutations + billions of years
- Requires **new genetic information** and new body plans
- **Death-driven** - constant death of the weakest
- Celebrates **suffering and elimination**

• Proposed theory, not observed



Adaptation (Observed)

Pre-existing DNA within kinds

- Uses **pre-existing DNA** "after their kind" (Genesis 1): כִּדְמֻתוֹ
- **Rapid, directed**, limited adjustments
- **God's mercy**, not culling
- Enables **survival and multiplication**

• Scientifically observed



Key Analogy

Evolution is like a car turning into a submarine (impossible transformation)
Adaptation is like a car with adjustable suspension (designed flexibility)

What we actually observe in laboratories and in nature is something far different: adaptation. Adaptation works with the pre-existing genetic information and regulatory systems already present within the fixed

boundaries God established in Genesis 1: “after their kind,” a phrase repeated ten times for emphasis. It is rapid, directed, and strictly limited. No new kinds are created. Existing information is simply expressed, fine-tuned, or slightly modified to meet new conditions.

Imagine a modern vehicle equipped with adjustable suspension, climate control, and intelligent fuel management. When the road gets rough or the weather changes, the vehicle automatically adapts without transforming into an airplane or submarine. That is adaptation. Evolution claims the vehicle somehow became a completely different machine through random breakdowns and accidental upgrades. The first is engineering genius. The second is mechanical fantasy.

After the Flood, animals dispersing from the mountains of Ararat quickly developed thicker fur in colder northern climates, adjusted digestive systems for new food sources, and modified behaviors to match changing seasons, all without crossing the “kind” barrier. God had equipped them well.

Survival of the Fittest: A Merciless System?

At the heart of Darwinian evolution lies “survival of the fittest.” This is not a neutral scientific phrase. It envisions a world where the constant death of the weakest drives supposed progress. Suffering, starvation, predation, and elimination become the engine of advancement.

Survival of the Fittest vs God's Plan Slide 4

Evolution's "Survival of the Fittest" A plan Satan would endorse?	God's Plan Mercy and blessing
Requires constant death of the weakest	God blesses animals to multiply and fill the earth (Genesis 9)
Celebrates suffering and elimination	Adaptation = God's mercy , not culling
Contrasts with God's words: "I have come that they may have life" (John 10:10)	Brings life and abundance
Death is the engine that drives Evolution	Life-affirming design

Key Biblical Truth
Genesis 8:17 – "Bring out every kind of living creature that is with you... so they can multiply on the earth and be fruitful and increase in number on it."

This does not sound like the God who declares, “I have come that they may have life, and have it to the full” (John 10:10). It sounds far more like the enemy who comes “to steal and kill and destroy” (John 10:10).

In striking contrast, immediately after the Flood God did not command the animals to engage in merciless competition. He blessed them: “Be fruitful and multiply and fill the earth” (Genesis 9:1). He even established a covenant with every living creature (Genesis 9:8-17). Adaptation reflects God’s mercy in a fallen world: mechanisms that allow survival and flourishing without requiring the wholesale slaughter of the unfit.

Adaptation from a Scientific Perspective

Scientifically, adaptation is rapid, repeatable, and well-documented. Organisms display phenotypic plasticity: the ability to change observable traits in direct response to environmental cues, often without any alteration to the DNA sequence itself. These changes are highly regulated by sophisticated cellular control systems.

Real-world examples abound:

- Bacteria adjust gene expression within hours to survive new toxins or nutrient shortages.
- Plants alter leaf shape, root depth, or flowering time in a single generation when facing drought or poor soil.
- Fish change color or body shape based on water temperature or predator presence.
- Insects develop different wing patterns or metabolic rates according to seasonal shifts.



Bacteria
Toxin resistance

- Rapid adaptation to antibiotics and toxins
- Phenotypic plasticity without DNA changes
- Survival mechanisms in hostile environments



Plants
Drought adaptation

- Drought tolerance within generations
- Root system modifications for water
- Leaf structure changes for efficiency



Fish
Color change

- Color adaptation to environment
- Behavioral changes for survival
- Scale patterns for camouflage



Insects
Wing patterns

- Wing pattern variations
- Metabolic adaptations
- Life cycle modifications



4 Examples



Rapid Adaptation



Gen Generations



Global Evidence

Scientific Evidence

After the Flood, animals left the Ark carrying maximum genetic variability (high heterozygosity). In mere generations they adapted to diverse new environments: thicker coats for ice-age conditions, new digestive efficiencies, and behavioral shifts, all while remaining the same basic kinds. This is not evolution creating novelty. It is the activation of God’s pre-loaded toolkit in a sovereignly controlled, post-Flood world.

Nucleosome Packaging: The Creator’s Rapid Genetic Switchboard

One of the most elegant mechanisms God designed is nucleosome packaging. DNA is tightly wrapped around histone proteins like beads on a string. Epigenetic chemical tags (acetylation, methylation, and others) dynamically loosen or tighten this packaging to turn genes on or off in response to environmental signals, all without altering the underlying DNA code. This allows genes to be expressed differentially based on the environmental conditions the organism is in. God's provision in action.

Nucleosome Packaging – The Switchboard

DNA-Histone Packaging Structure
NUCLEOSOME PACKAGING IN A LIVING CELL NUCLEUS

Key Mechanism
DNA wraps around histone proteins like **beads on a string**, with epigenetic tags controlling gene expression without changing the DNA code.

Epigenetic Switches
Gene regulation mechanism

- ✓ DNA wrapped around histones like beads on a string
- ✓ Epigenetic tags turn genes ON/OFF without changing DNA code
- ✓ Enables fast adaptation in new environments

Scott Kelly Example
Space gene expression

Astronaut Scott Kelly
~7% of genes ("space genes") changed expression in space during his year-long mission (as in the Flood Museum Video)

7% Genes modified

146-147
Base pairs per nucleosome

Rapid
Adaptation speed

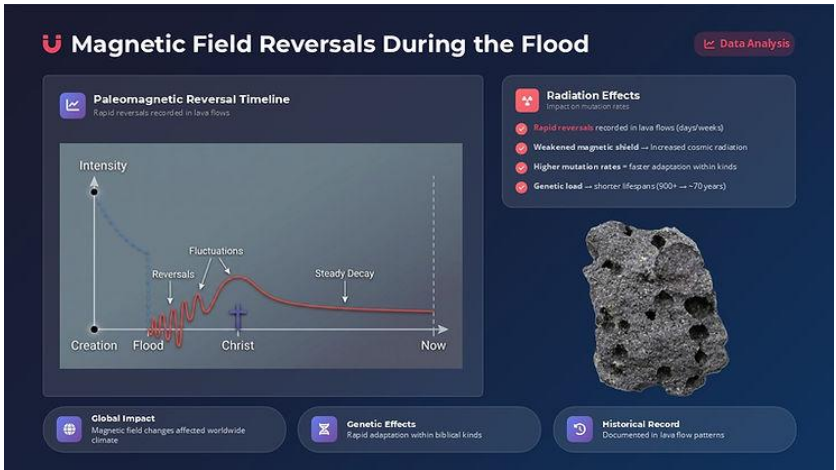
Space
Environment effect

A compelling modern parallel comes from NASA’s Twins Study. Astronaut Scott Kelly spent 340 days aboard the International Space Station while his identical twin brother Mark remained on Earth. Researchers observed that about 7 percent of Scott’s genes (hundreds of “space genes”) changed expression due to microgravity, radiation, and stress. These affected immune function, DNA repair, bone formation, and more. Crucially, about 93 percent of the gene-expression changes reverted to baseline within six months of his return (Garrett-Bakelman et al., 2019). This demonstrates a reversible, environment-responsive system engineered for rapid adaptation: exactly what post-Flood animals needed to tune traits like fur thickness, metabolism, and

behavior in a few generations.

Magnetic Field Reversals: A Temporary Boost with a Cost

Paleomagnetic data from lava flows at locations such as Steens Mountain, Oregon, record rapid magnetic field reversals during the Flood year: polarity changes occurring in days or weeks, not millennia (Humphreys, 1986; 1988; 1990). A weakened magnetic shield allowed increased cosmic radiation to reach the surface.

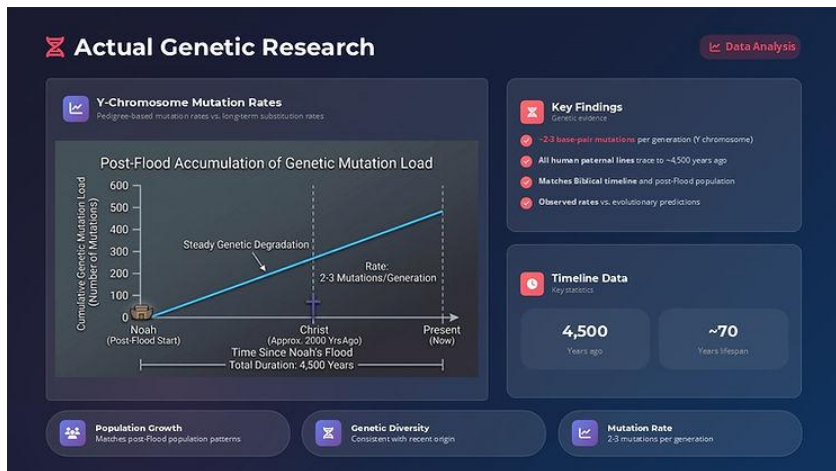


This surge provided extra genetic variation within kinds, accelerating adaptation to new climates and diets. However, it also increased genetic load, contributing to the documented decline in lifespans after the Flood (from over 900 years pre-Flood to about 70 years by Moses’ time). Even amid judgment, God sovereignly used these physical realities to help the preserved kinds spread and multiply.

Genetic Research: Timelines That Fit Scripture

Dr. Nathaniel Jeanson has delivered powerful confirmation using observed pedigree-based mutation rates from modern family studies. On the Y chromosome, he documented an average of about 2 to 3 new mutations per generation. Scaling these real rates across global data shows all human paternal lineages trace back to a most recent common ancestor only about 4,500 years ago: precisely the time of Noah’s three sons and their wives (Genesis 10). Mitochondrial DNA studies yield similar results, fitting a roughly 6,000-year history back to Adam and Eve. Population growth curves

reconstructed from this data match the rapid post-Flood expansion described in Scripture (Jeanson, 2019–2020).



Mainstream evolutionary models rely on much slower “long-term substitution rates,” pushing timelines back 200,000 to 300,000-plus years. This creates irreconcilable conflicts with recorded history, archaeology, and the rapid rise of post-Flood civilizations. Jeanson’s data-driven approach eliminates these contradictions and confirms that the genetic changes fueling adaptation occurred quickly within the Biblical timeframe.



God’s Loving Preparation

Putting it all together, our Creator sovereignly equipped every kind on the Ark with rich genetic variability, nucleosome epigenetic switches, responsive mechanisms triggered by environment and radiation, and mutation rates that enabled rapid diversification. Animals filled the earth without evolving new

kinds. They simply activated the sophisticated toolkit God had already provided.

Summary of God's Adaptive Design

5 Mechanisms

Pre-loaded Genetic Variability

Genetic diversity built into creation from the beginning

Original DNA diversity

Multiple alleles per gene

Designed

Nucleosome Epigenetic Switches

DNA packaging controls gene expression

Mistone modifications

Gene regulation

Active

Environmental Triggers

External factors activate adaptation

Climate responses

Diet adjustments

Responsive

Radiation-Triggered Changes

Cosmic radiation affects mutation rates

Mutation rates

Genetic diversity

Controlled

"After Their Kind" Boundaries

Species remain within created kinds

Species limits

No macro-evolution

Fixed

5 Mechanisms
God's adaptive design

Rapid Adaptation
Within 4,500 years

Global Evidence
Post-flood world

This is not the story of chaotic, death-driven evolution. This is the wise, pre-planned preparation of a loving God who knew exactly what challenges His creatures would face after the Flood.

As Genesis 8:17 records, God commanded: “Bring out every kind of living creature that is with you... so they can multiply on the earth and be fruitful and increase in number on it.”

Key Biblical Truth

Genesis 8:17

"Bring out every kind of living creature that is with you so they can multiply on the earth and be fruitful and increase in number on it."

Genesis 8:17 (NIV)

God's command for post-flood reproduction and multiplication

Adaptation Reveals a Loving Creator

Adaptation is not blind evolution but God's brilliant, merciful design. It reveals a Creator who cares for His creation, providing mechanisms for survival and flourishing in a post-flood world. This stands in stark contrast to evolution's death-driven, time-dependent process.

Loving Creator

Designed Adaptation

Global Evidence

The scientific evidence, from nucleosome dynamics and the NASA Twins Study to paleomagnetic records and genetic clocks, consistently supports this beautiful truth. Kinds reproduced after their kind. God equipped them in advance for a fallen yet sovereignly governed world.

134

Let us stand in awe of our Designer. He is not a distant force who left life to chance and death. He is a loving Creator who carefully prepared every kind to thrive after the Ark, and who offers the same care and salvation to us today through His Son, Jesus Christ.

Conclusion

Key Takeaways

Evolution vs Adaptation

Evolution is **death-driven** and time-dependent, while adaptation is **God's brilliant design** for survival.

Genetic Research

~2-3 new mutations per generation with Y-chromosome clock matching Biblical timeline.

God's Observation

For as yet there is one land, but there is one lord for humans, another for animals, another for birds, and another for fish. (1 Corinthians 15:39)

Global Evidence

Evidence supports **recent creation** and a global Flood, with all human paternal lines tracing to ~4,500 years ago.

Adaptive Mechanisms

5 **mechanisms** of God's adaptive design:

- pre-loaded variability
- nucleosome switches
- environmental triggers
- radiation changes,
- and kind boundaries.

Visit The Flood Museum

Learn more about the evidence for creation and the global Flood at our museum in Nauvoo, Illinois.

This Summer:
 Rock & Gem Show July 3-4, 2026
 America 250 Bible Exhibit: June 16-August 15, 2026
 Monday Night Discussions All Summer
 Prepare to Give Thanks, October 20-24, 2026

We'd love to hear your thoughts and answer any questions about adaptation, creation, and the evidence for a global Flood.



Presentation by Dr. Robert L. Wright | The Flood Museum

www.TheFloodMuseum.com

Bibliography

Scientific and Technical References

NASA Twins Study / Scott Kelly Gene Expression

Garrett-Bakelman, Francine E., et al. (2019). "The NASA Twins Study: A Multidimensional Analysis of a Year-Long Human Spaceflight." *Science*, 364(6436), eaau8650. DOI: 10.1126/science.aau8650.

Nucleosome Packaging and Epigenetics

Becker, Peter B., and Jerry L. Workman. (2013). "Nucleosome Remodeling and Epigenetics." *Cold Spring Harbor Perspectives in Biology*, 5(7), a017905.

Kong, S., et al. (2022). "Nucleosome-Omics: A Perspective on the Epigenetic Code." *Genes*, 13(8), 1114.

Phenotypic Plasticity and Rapid Adaptation

Bonamour, S., et al. (2019). “Phenotypic Plasticity in Response to Climate Change.” *Philosophical Transactions of the Royal Society B*, 374(1768).

Lightner, J.K. (2017). “Founder Events: Foundational in Rapid Post-Flood Diversification.” *Creation Research Society Quarterly*, 53(3):217-224.

Magnetic Field Reversals

Humphreys, D. Russell. (1986). “Reversals of the Earth’s Magnetic Field During the Genesis Flood.” *Proceedings of the First International Conference on Creationism*, 2:113-126.

Humphreys, D. Russell. (1988). “Has the Earth’s Magnetic Field Ever Flipped?” *Creation Research Society Quarterly*, 25(3):130-137.

Humphreys, D. Russell. (1990). “Physical Mechanism for Reversals of the Earth’s Magnetic Field During the Flood.” *Proceedings of the Second International Conference on Creationism*, 2:57-68.

Humphreys, D. Russell. (1990). “New Evidence for Rapid Reversals of the Earth’s Magnetic Field.” *Creation Research Society Quarterly*, 26(4):132-133.

Heterozygosity, Genetic Load, and Post-Flood Diversification

Jeanson, Nathaniel T., and Jason Lisle. (2016). “On the Origin of Eukaryotic Species’ Genotypic and Phenotypic Diversity: Genetic Clocks, Population Growth Curves, and Comparative Nuclear Genome Analyses Suggest Created Heterozygosity in Combination with Natural Processes as a Major Mechanism.” *Answers Research Journal*, 9:81-122.

Carter, Robert W. (2016). “Human Genetic Data Affirms Biblical History on Many Levels and Is an Excellent Resource for Creation-Based Research.” *Creation Research Society Quarterly*, 52:249-255.

Lightner, Jean K., and Jon Ahlquist. (2017). “Founder Events: Foundational in Rapid Post-Flood Diversification.” *Creation Research Society Quarterly*, 53(3):217-224.

Sanders, H.F. III. (2025). “Original Polyploidy as a Contributor to Diversification.” *Creation Research Society Quarterly* (in press).

Genetic Research

Jeanson, Nathaniel T. (2019–2020). “Evidence for a Human Y Chromosome Molecular Clock: Pedigree-Based Mutation Rates Suggest a 4,500-Year

History for Human Paternal Inheritance.” *Answers Research Journal*, 13:23–33. Jeanson, Nathaniel T. (2020). *Traced: Human DNA’s Big Surprise*. Master Books.

Evaluating the "Silurian Hypothesis" (Speculations about Ancients but No Biblical History Allowed, Geological “Erasure”, Flood Record, etc.) by Dr. Robert Wright

<https://www.afloodofhope.com/post/evaluating-the-silurian-hypothesis>

Ancient Advanced Civilizations and the Selective Openness of Secular Academia

A recent article in [*BBC Science Focus Magazine*](#) (June 6, 2026) titled **“This bold theory says we’re not Earth’s first advanced civilisation”** explores the so-called “Silurian hypothesis.” Proposed in a 2018 paper by physicist Prof. Adam Frank and climate modeller Dr. Gavin Schmidt, the idea suggests that an advanced industrial civilization could have existed on Earth millions of years ago, perhaps between 4 and 400 million years before present, and that we might never detect clear evidence of it. Geological processes like erosion, tectonics, and sedimentation would have erased cities, artifacts, and most direct traces. Any climate or carbon signatures would blend into natural events such as ancient hyperthermals (rapid warming episodes).

The article frames this as a thought experiment useful for understanding what marks our own civilization might leave behind and for refining searches for technological life on other planets. It draws its name from the reptilian “Silurians” of *Doctor Who*, a clever sci-fi nod. The authors themselves call such a civilization “extremely unlikely,” yet the piece presents the concept as intellectually bold and worth considering within a deep-time, uniformitarian framework.

The Core Irony: Willingness to Speculate, But Only on Their Terms

Here is where the evaluation becomes especially revealing, and it aligns with patterns we often see in secular treatments of ancient human history.

Academics appear remarkably willing to entertain the possibility of an ancient, intelligent, technologically capable civilization, provided it remains safely sequestered in deep evolutionary time, predates humans by hundreds of millions of years, involves non-human or pre-human actors, and leaves essentially no testable evidence because geology erased it.

They can speculate about industrial carbon pulses indistinguishable from natural events, sustainable energy sources that leave even smaller footprints, or even hypothetical pyramids swallowed by plate tectonics. This keeps everything comfortably within the reigning paradigm of slow, uniform processes over vast ages and an evolutionary timeline for life on Earth.

What they show far less willingness to consider is a preflood biblical civilization: intelligent human beings living in the relatively recent past, a few thousand years ago, possessing cities, metallurgy, music, and organized society as described in Genesis 4, and then experiencing a global, catastrophic judgment in the Flood of Noah's day (Genesis 6–9). That possibility is routinely dismissed as myth or religious storytelling, even though it would explain the sudden appearance of complex human culture after a major geological reset and why certain sedimentary layers contain evidence of rapid, catastrophic burial on a massive scale.

In short, an ancient advanced civilization is intellectually permissible if it does not involve the people of the Bible, does not require a young earth, and does not demand a global Flood that reshaped the planet's surface in a single year. The same scholars who can imagine a lost industrial society from the Silurian period or earlier often treat the very idea of preflood human technological achievement as off-limits or embarrassing. This is not neutral science. It is a worldview filter at work.

What Scripture Actually Describes

The Bible does not portray preflood humanity as primitive cave-dwellers slowly evolving technology. Quite the opposite:

- Cain builds a city (Genesis 4:17).
- His descendants include Tubal-Cain, “an instructor of every artificer in brass and iron” (Genesis 4:22).

- Jubal becomes “the father of all such as handle the harp and organ” (Genesis 4:21).

These are not Stone Age indicators. They describe people capable of building, metalworking, and the arts, intelligent image-bearers of God living in a world that still retained much of its original created goodness and genetic richness. Long lifespans (recorded in Genesis 5) would have allowed accumulated knowledge and skill to develop rapidly.

Then came the Flood, a global, year-long catastrophe that Scripture presents as both historical and judicial. The apostle Peter later warned that scoffers would arise in the last days who deliberately forget this event, choosing instead to insist that “all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation” (2 Peter 3:3–6). That is precisely the uniformitarian assumption underlying the Silurian hypothesis: present geological processes, operating at today’s slow rates, are the key to the past. Catastrophic explanations are minimized or ruled out *a priori*.

The Flood Came Because of Iniquity: A Reality Non-Biblical Scholars Prefer to Ignore

One of the most unfortunate realities of the Flood narrative is the reason it came at all. Genesis 6:5 states plainly that “God saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually.” Verse 11 adds that “the earth also was corrupt before God, and the earth was filled with violence.” God was grieved in His heart (Genesis 6:6) and determined to bring judgment because of rampant iniquity.

The Flood was not a random natural disaster or a local river overflow, as many secular scholars prefer to reinterpret it. It was righteous judgment upon a world that had rejected its Creator and descended into moral chaos. Yet in the midst of that judgment, God provided salvation for Noah and his family through the ark, a beautiful picture of deliverance by grace.

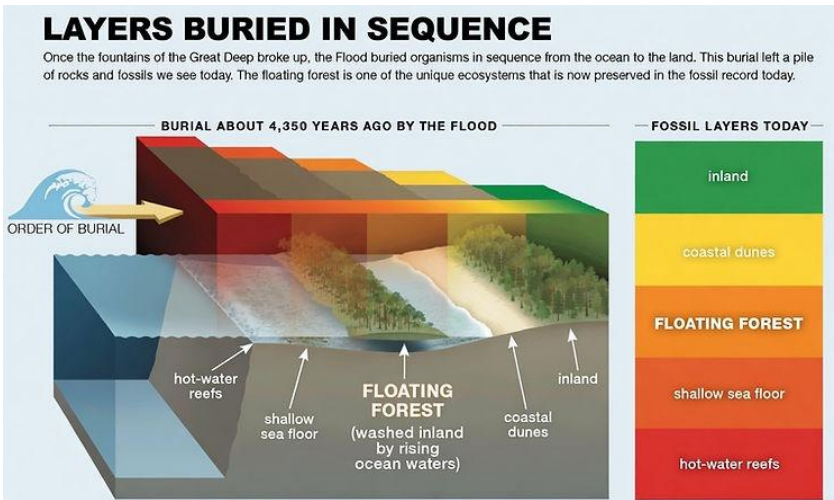
Non-biblical scholars would rather ignore this moral and spiritual dimension entirely. They may occasionally concede that some ancient flood stories exist in various cultures, but they strip away the biblical account’s central message: sin has consequences, God is holy and just, and judgment is real. Acknowledging the Flood as divine response to iniquity would force them to confront the reality of human rebellion against God and the need for

repentance. It would also validate the historical reliability of Genesis rather than treating it as pious myth.

This avoidance is not accidental. As Peter explains, the scoffers are “willingly ignorant” of the Flood (2 Peter 3:5). Facing the biblical Flood means facing the God who judges iniquity and who has appointed a day of final judgment through His Son (Acts 17:31). Many would rather speculate about hypothetical civilizations erased over hundreds of millions of years than reckon with a real judgment that occurred a few thousand years ago because of sin.

Geological “Erasure” and the Flood Record

The *BBC Science Focus* article correctly notes that cities and artifacts would not survive hundreds of millions of years of erosion and tectonic recycling. But the same article assumes those slow processes have operated uniformly for eons. Creation geology offers a different lens: the thick sedimentary rock layers we observe worldwide, with their ordered fossil sequences and evidence of rapid deposition, are better explained as the result of a single, global Flood followed by post-Flood adjustments.



In this framework, much of the “missing” evidence for preflood civilization is not missing at all. It is buried under the very strata that secular geology attributes to millions of years of gradual accumulation. Soft-sediment deformation, large-scale fossil graveyards, and polystrate trees speak of rapid burial, not slow raindrop-by-raindrop deposition. The Flood provides both the

mechanism for erasure of surface structures and the preservation of a new geological record.

Post-Flood, the Bible describes rapid adaptation within created kinds as animals and humans dispersed across the earth (Genesis 8–11), exactly the kind of genetic sorting and expression we observe today, without requiring new information or Darwinian macroevolution.

True Science Aligns with Scripture

We consistently affirm that good data is not the enemy of faith. When interpreted without the prior commitment to excluding biblical history, the geological and archaeological record supports rather than contradicts the Scriptures. The Silurian hypothesis is an interesting speculative exercise, but it ultimately illustrates how far secular academia will stretch to preserve its timeline while remaining closed to the straightforward reading of Genesis.

The same scholars who can imagine a lost reptilian industrial civilization from deep time often struggle to grant even basic historicity to the preflood world or the global Flood that followed. This selective openness reveals more about presuppositions than about evidence.

As the apostle Paul exhorted, “Prove all things; hold fast that which is good” (1 Thessalonians 5:21). And as the Bereans modeled, we should search the Scriptures daily to see whether these things are so (Acts 17:11). When we do, we find that the biblical account of creation, a preflood civilization of intelligent image-bearers, a global judgment by water because of iniquity, and the subsequent repopulation of the earth provides a coherent, hope-filled framework that makes better sense of both the world we see and the One who made it.

True science, rightly understood, always points back to the Creator and the reliability of His Word. The “bold theory” of a Silurian-level civilization may capture headlines, but the even bolder, and historically grounded, reality is the preflood world and the Flood that reshaped our planet because of sin. That story does not need to be hidden in deep time or sci-fi speculation. It is written plainly in Genesis and confirmed in the rocks beneath our feet. And it points us to the greater ark of salvation found in Jesus Christ, who delivers us from sin and coming judgment.

PART 4: DINOSAURS: NOT SO OLD AFTER ALL



Dinosaur Soft Tissue by Dr. Robert Wright

<https://www.afloodofhope.com/post/dinosaur-soft-tissue>

Compelling Evidence for Noah's Global Flood

At **The Flood Museum**, we showcase discoveries that affirm the biblical account of a young earth and the cataclysmic Global Flood described in Genesis. One of the most intriguing challenges to evolutionary timelines is the presence of soft tissue in dinosaur fossils—materials like blood vessels, osteocytes, and collagen that should have decayed long ago if these creatures died out millions of years ago. Instead, these findings point to rapid burial during Noah's Flood just a few thousand years ago, preserving tissues before decomposition could set in.

The Groundbreaking Discoveries of Soft Tissue in Dinosaurs

The story begins with Dr. Mary Schweitzer, a paleontologist at North Carolina State University, who in 2005 reported finding flexible blood vessels, red blood cells, and collagen inside a 68-million-year-old *Tyrannosaurus rex* femur from Montana's Hell Creek Formation. This stunned the scientific community, as soft tissues were thought impossible to survive for tens of

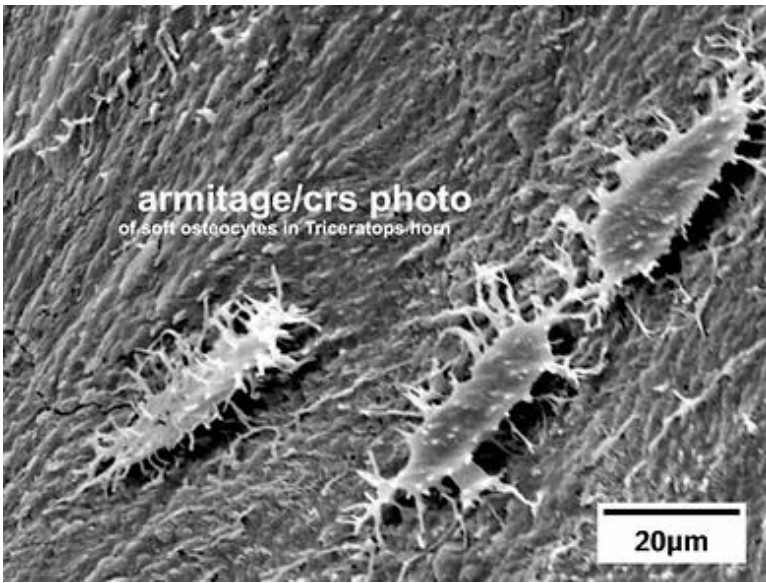
millions of years. Schweitzer's team demineralized the bone, revealing translucent vessels and what appeared to be intact cells. Follow-up studies confirmed similar preservations in other dinosaurs, including *Brachylophosaurus* and ceratopsians, with ages claimed to span 65-85 million years.

These discoveries include not just vessels but also proteins like collagen, which biochemical tests show are highly crosslinked—yet still remarkably intact. From a biblical perspective, such preservation defies deep time but aligns perfectly with rapid entombment in Flood sediments.



Dr. Mark Armitage's Pioneering Work

Inspired by Schweitzer's findings, microscopist Dr. Mark Armitage founded the Dinosaur Soft Tissue Research Institute (DSTRI) to systematically search for and document these tissues. In 2012, Armitage and colleague Kevin Anderson excavated a large *Triceratops* horn from Hell Creek—the same formation as Schweitzer's *T. rex*. Without demineralization, Armitage cracked open the horn and found stretchy, pliable sheets of soft fibrillar bone tissue.



Bone Osteocytes in Triceratops Bone

Under scanning electron microscopy (SEM), Armitage revealed ultrastructures preserved to the sub-micron level: osteocytes with filopodia (delicate extensions), blood vessels, and even peripheral nerves—the first reported in dinosaur bone. He compared these to modern chicken nerves, showing identical features. Armitage's peer-reviewed papers, including in *Microscopy Today*, refute claims of contamination or biofilm, arguing these are genuine dinosaur remnants.

Armitage's work faced controversy; after publishing in 2013 while at California State University Northridge, he was fired, leading to a settled lawsuit alleging religious discrimination. Undeterred, he continues documenting soft tissues, including vein valves and axons, through DSTRI. Dr. Wright assisted Dr. Armitage in several dinosaur soft tissue labs in 2020.



How Soft Tissue Confirms the Recent Global Flood

The presence of soft tissues—osteocytes, blood vessels, collagen, and nerves—challenges the idea of millions-of-years-old fossils. Experiments show biomolecules like collagen degrade in thousands of years under ideal conditions, not millions. Evolutionary explanations, like iron-mediated crosslinking or anoxic burial, fall short; they don't account for the observed elasticity and detail.



Dr. Wright Photo of Dinosaur Nerve from *Nanotyrannus*

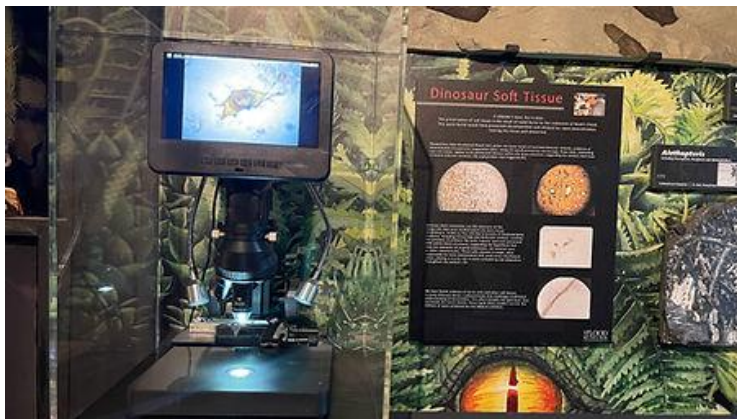
Biblically, these tissues indicate dinosaurs perished recently during Noah's Flood around 4,500 years ago. The Flood's massive sediment flows rapidly buried creatures, preventing decay and enabling exceptional preservation. Features like the "dinosaur death pose" (arched necks) and upside-down armored dinosaurs suggest water-borne burial. Armitage's findings, including intact organic food webs in bioapatite, further support this rapid entombment.

Implications for Biblical History

These discoveries dismantle evolutionary timelines, affirming Genesis' young earth and literal Flood. They show dinosaurs coexisted with humans pre-Flood, perishing in the judgment. Soft tissues aren't rare anomalies but expected in a biblical framework, as seen in global finds.

Visit Our Dinosaur Soft Tissue Exhibit

Experience this evidence firsthand at The Flood Museum's Fossil Evidence exhibit, featuring the Dinosaur Soft Tissue display. View actual slides under our high-powered microscope, showcasing osteocytes and vessels from Triceratops horns, thanks to Armitage's samples. It's a powerful testament to the Flood's reality.



The Dinosaur Soft Tissue Exhibit at The Flood Museum

The soft tissues in dinosaur bones whisper a truth louder than any textbook: the Global Flood was recent, real, and reshaping our understanding of history. Explore more at **The Flood Museum**.

The Astonishing Preservation of Dinosaur Soft Tissue: Evidence of a Recent Flood Catastrophe (Extended Essay) by Dr. Robert Wright

<https://www.afloodofhope.com/post/the-astonishing-preservation-of-dinosaur-soft-tissue-evidence-of-a-recent-flood-catastrophe>

This investigation began while on a dig with Dr. Mark Armitage in Glendive, Montana, in 2020. As we excavated and discussed the specimens before us, we were constantly amazed at the extraordinary level of preservation we witnessed. These bones did not look thousands of years old, let alone millions or hundreds of millions of years old. What mechanism could possibly explain their existence? How could soft tissues remain intact after all this supposed time? What had God accomplished during the Flood that allowed us to witness this remarkable evidence today? After several years of study, I am

confident I have some of the answers. They fill me with awe of the Master Chemist, the Architect of all Creation, our God.

In the world of paleontology, few discoveries have challenged long-held assumptions as profoundly as the recovery of soft tissues from dinosaur bones. Flexible blood vessels, stretchy fibrous matrices, elastic sheets of fibrillar bone, and even what appear to be intact cells, peripheral nerves, and blood remnants have been extracted from specimens long assumed to be tens of millions of years old. These finds are not mere curiosities. They stand as powerful testimony to the truth of Scripture. The bones of these ancient creatures cannot possibly be hundreds of millions or even millions of years old. Instead, they point unmistakably to burial and preservation during the global Flood described in Genesis, just thousands of years ago.

Paleontologist Mary Schweitzer and her team first reported these remarkable finds in 2005, pulling supple, elastic blood vessels and osteocyte-like cells from the femur of a *Tyrannosaurus rex*. Building on this, researcher and microscopist Dr. Mark Armitage made groundbreaking contributions through his work at the Hell Creek Formation in Montana. In 2012, Dr. Armitage and colleague Kevin Anderson excavated a large *Triceratops horridus* supraorbital horn. Upon microscopic examination, Armitage discovered thin, elastic, reddish-brown sheets of soft fibrillar bone tissue that could be peeled away and stretched significantly. Decalcification revealed osteocytes, blood vessels, and other delicate structures. Dr. Armitage has continued this research through the Dinosaur Soft Tissue Research Institute, publishing further firsts such as the identification of peripheral nerves in *Triceratops* occipital condyle bone. These structures match modern vertebrate nerves in microscopic detail and retain flexibility.

Dr. Armitage's work extends beyond Cretaceous dinosaurs. He has also reported soft tissue preservation in Permian fossils from Oklahoma, dated conventionally to around 290 million years old. These include blood clots preserved within vascular canals of amphibian limb bones (such as those of *Eryops* and *Cacops*) and exceptionally clear peripheral nerve segments showing diagnostic connective tissue patterns. Such discoveries in even what is conventionally considered older strata further underscore the inconsistency of deep-time assumptions with the observed biological material.

Subsequent work has revealed similar preservation in other specimens: collagen proteins, potential red blood cell remnants, and transparent, branching vessels that still respond to chemical treatments much like fresh tissue. Conventional evolutionary thinking insists these dinosaurs roamed the earth 65 to 68 million years ago (and Permian creatures far earlier). Yet biology and chemistry tell a different story. Organic materials like proteins,

collagen, blood components, and nerves degrade rapidly under normal conditions. Experiments show that even in ideal laboratory storage, soft tissues break down over centuries, not eons. The persistence of these delicate structures demands rapid burial followed by conditions that halted decay almost immediately.



Dr. Armitage: *Triceratops horridus* supraorbital horn elastic tissue

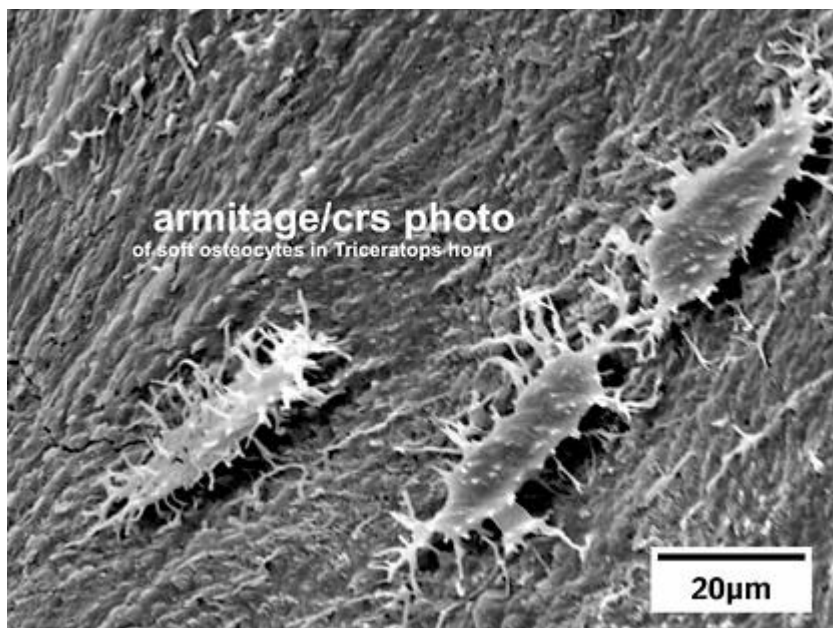
This aligns perfectly with the biblical account of Noah's Flood. A cataclysmic event involving the bursting of the fountains of the great deep and the windows of heaven. Vast tectonic upheavals, volcanic activity, and massive sediment flows would have entombed countless creatures in a matter of days or weeks. The Flood was not a gentle rain but a violent, earth-shaping judgment that mixed waters, minerals, and sediments on a global scale. In such chaos, organisms from diverse ecosystems, spanning what we now call Permian to Cretaceous, were swept up, rapidly buried, and subjected to unique geochemical environments that promoted preservation rather than dissolution.

A Pervasive Mechanism for Preservation Across Ecosystems

Fossils, while not as overwhelmingly abundant as one might expect from a pre-Flood world teeming with life, are still remarkably common and widespread. This distribution requires a mechanism that operated pervasively across marine, terrestrial, and freshwater environments. Not every creature was perfectly preserved. Many were disarticulated or destroyed by the violence of the waters. Yet enough survived in remarkable condition to form

the fossil record we see today. The key lies in the Flood's mineral-rich, superheated waters.

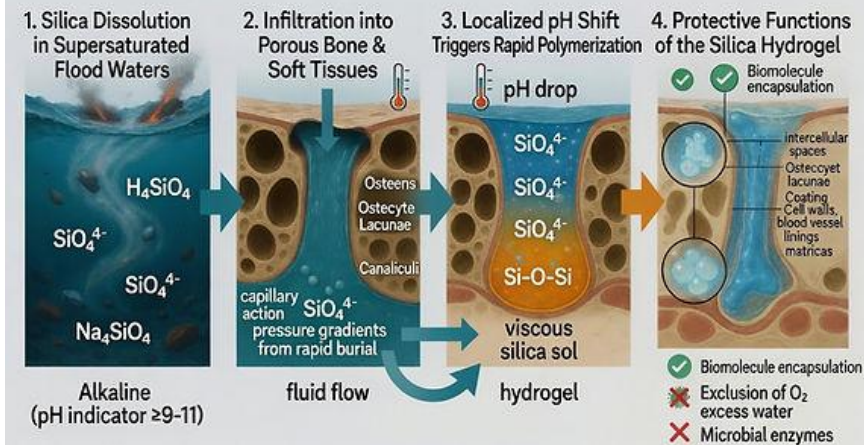
As the fountains of the great deep erupted, they released enormous volumes of water saturated with dissolved minerals from the earth's interior. Volcanic and hydrothermal inputs would have further loaded these waters with silica, iron, carbonates, and other compounds. Superheated conditions under pressure could accelerate mineral precipitation while simultaneously inhibiting bacterial decay. Rapid burial in fine sediments excluded oxygen, creating anoxic microenvironments. Together, these factors created a perfect storm for both mineralization and the stabilization of remaining organic components.



Sodium Silicate: A Key Agent in Rapid Preservation

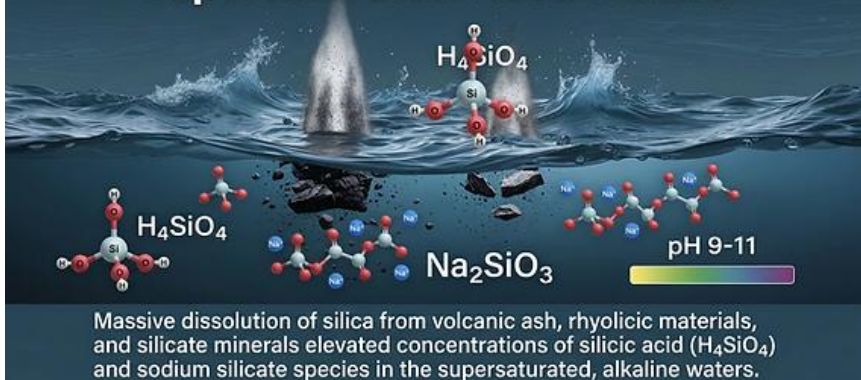
I propose a key agent in the preservation process is **sodium silicate** (Na_2SiO_3). In alkaline, silica-rich solutions, conditions likely prevalent as Flood waters interacted with volcanic ash, dissolved silicates from crustal materials, and hydrothermal fluids, sodium silicate readily forms and can penetrate tissues rapidly. Laboratory experiments and natural analogs demonstrate its effectiveness in replicating the types of preservation seen in dinosaur and Permian fossils, including delicate structures rich in proteins, carbohydrates, and especially lipids.

Silica Infiltration & Hydrogel Formation: Soft Tissue Preservation in Flood Waters

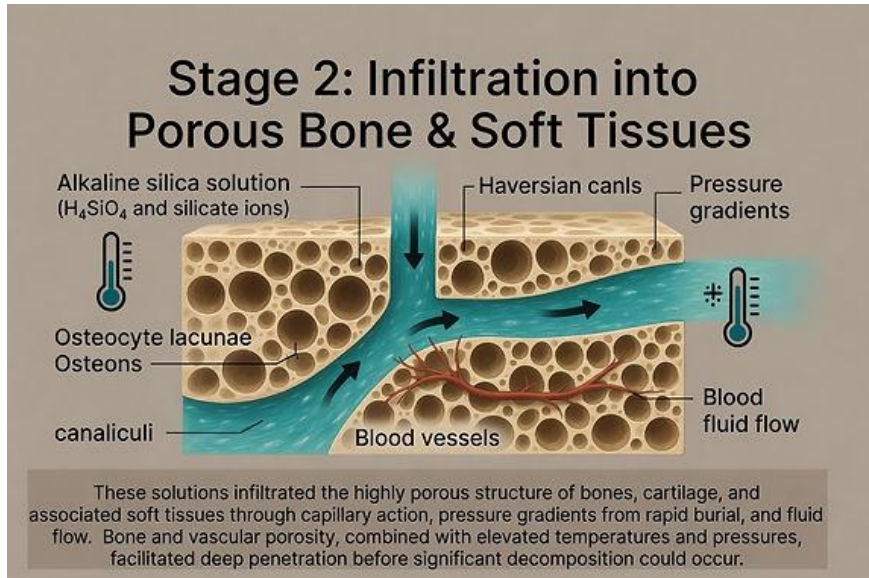


The detailed chemical process unfolds as follows. During the intense Flood dynamics, massive dissolution of silica from volcanic ash, rhyolitic materials, and silicate minerals elevated concentrations of silicic acid (H_4SiO_4) and sodium silicate species in the supersaturated, alkaline waters. These solutions infiltrated the highly porous structure of bones, cartilage, and associated soft tissues through capillary action, pressure gradients from rapid burial, and fluid flow. Bone and vascular porosity, combined with the elevated temperatures and pressures in the Flood environment, facilitated deep penetration before significant decomposition could occur.

Stage 1: Silica Dissolution in Supersaturated Flood Waters

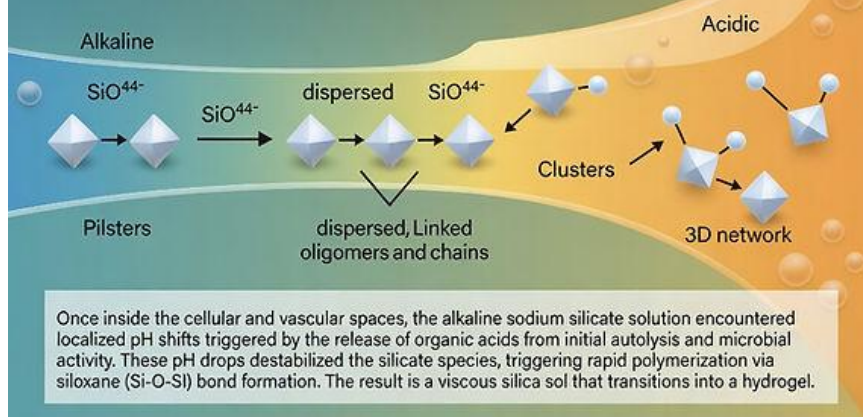


Once inside the cellular and vascular spaces, the alkaline sodium silicate solution encountered localized pH shifts triggered by the release of organic acids from initial autolysis and microbial activity. These pH drops, often moving from alkaline toward neutral or slightly acidic ranges, destabilized the monomeric and oligomeric silicate species. This triggered rapid polymerization: silicate ions (SiO_4^{4-} and related species) condensed via siloxane (Si-O-Si) bond formation, building chains, clusters, and eventually a three-dimensional network. The result is a viscous silica sol (colloidal silica) that transitions into a hydrogel. This gel fills intercellular spaces, coats cell walls, osteocyte lacunae, and blood vessel linings, and impregnates collagenous and fibrillar matrices.



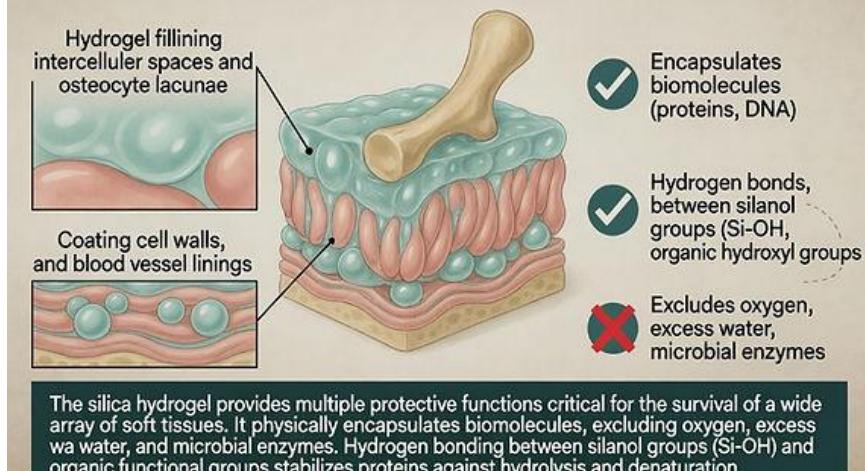
The silica hydrogel provides multiple protective functions critical for the survival of a wide array of soft tissues. It physically encapsulates biomolecules, excluding oxygen, excess water, and microbial enzymes. Hydrogen bonding between silanol groups (Si-OH) and organic functional groups (such as hydroxyls on collagen or polysaccharides) stabilizes proteins against hydrolysis and denaturation. In experimental settings, this process replicates fine histological details, including cell outlines and fibrous structures, consistent with the elastic sheets and nerve tissues recovered by Dr. Armitage. Dehydration and aging of the gel lead to syneresis (shrinkage and water expulsion) followed by recrystallization into more stable phases such as opal-A, opal-CT, or microcrystalline quartz. This produces permineralized yet often flexible composites when the mineral phase is later partially removed in laboratory decalcification.

Stage 3: Localized pH Shift Triggers Rapid Polymerization



This mechanism is particularly vital for the preservation of **lipids**, which face some of the most severe challenges among soft-tissue components. Lipids, including phospholipids in cell membranes, cholesterol, and fatty acids, are highly susceptible to rapid degradation through hydrolysis (breakdown by water into fatty acids and glycerol), oxidation (especially of polyunsaturated fatty acids, leading to rancidity and chain reactions that fragment molecules), and microbial attack by lipases. In normal burial environments, these processes cause lipid membranes to disintegrate within years to decades, leaving little to no trace. The hydrophobic nature of many lipids makes them prone to leaching or emulsification in aqueous settings, while free radicals accelerate peroxidation, destroying structural integrity. Without intervention, the delicate bilayer structure of cell membranes and intracellular lipid droplets should not persist even over thousands of years, let alone the supposed millions.

Stage 4: Protective Functions of the Silica Hydrogel



The silica hydrogel addresses these vulnerabilities directly by creating a sealed, anoxic, and dehydrated microenvironment. The gel coats and impregnates lipid-rich structures, forming a physical and chemical barrier that limits water access (reducing hydrolysis), blocks oxygen (preventing oxidative chain reactions), and excludes microbes and their enzymes. Hydrogen bonding and physical encapsulation further stabilize lipid molecules, preventing fragmentation and leaching. This explains the recovery of intact membrane remnants and other lipid-derived structures alongside proteins and nerves in specimens studied by Schweitzer and Armitage. Modern experiments with silica solutions on organic tissues confirm the ability to preserve fine cellular details, including membrane-like components, with high fidelity.

Modern experiments also validate the speed and fidelity of this mechanism overall. Wood and organic tissues soaked in sodium metasilicate or silicic acid solutions can achieve significant silicification in days to weeks, with full petrification-like results in months under accelerated conditions. Hot spring studies show wood silicifying to 40 percent by weight in just seven years in silica-rich waters, while laboratory simulations using ethyl silicate or sodium silicate solutions replicate cellular structures with high precision. In Flood-scale conditions, with vastly higher mineral loads, temperature fluctuations, and sediment dynamics, the process would have operated orders of magnitude faster and more pervasively.

This silica-based sealing explains the permineralization observed in many specimens, including Dr. Armitage's *Triceratops* horn tissues and his Permian amphibian bones, while preserving the elastic properties of the remaining

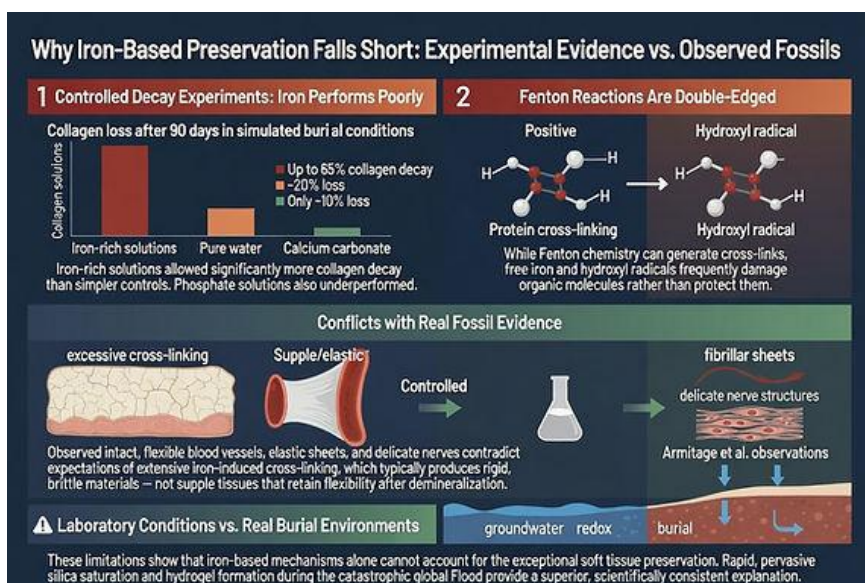
organic cores. The resulting silica gel acts as a robust barrier against further decay, consistent with the stretchable yet stabilized nature of the recovered tissues.

Supporting evidence for silica involvement comes from direct analyses of fossil bones. In some Cretaceous bird fossils, preserved chondrocytes (cartilage cells) were infused with aluminum and silica rather than iron, demonstrating that silica compounds can play a key role in stabilizing soft structures. Demineralized dinosaur bone vessels and fibrous remnants often show silicon-dominated compositions under energy-dispersive X-ray spectroscopy (EDS), with quartz crystals and silica-rich infillings present alongside them. Silica concretions form readily in environments where organic decay lowers pH in silica-rich pore waters, a process easily scaled up in the Flood's turbulent, mineral-laden conditions. These observations lend strong credibility to a silica-based sealing mechanism operating pervasively across ecosystems.

Iron as a Preservative: Significant Limitations

Some researchers, including Mary Schweitzer, have proposed that iron released from hemoglobin could serve as a natural preservative. In this model, iron from decomposing red blood cells participates in Fenton-type chemistry, generating hydroxyl radicals that create cross-links between proteins such as collagen. These cross-links, along with iron oxyhydroxide precipitates, are said to stabilize tissues and inhibit microbial decay. In the Flood context, iron mobilized from massive erosion and volcanic activity could have infused remains quickly, potentially acting as a fixative in localized contexts.

However, this hypothesis faces substantial challenges as a primary or sufficient mechanism for the observed preservation and is not viable for explaining tissues that have remained flexible and biologically authentic over supposed deep time.



Other potential agents released in the turbulent mixing of ecosystems include carbonates, phosphates, or aluminum compounds, many of which are routinely detected in fossil bone matrices through recrystallization and permineralization. The result: bones that appear millions of years old by flawed radiometric assumptions but contain tissues inconsistent with deep time.

Critics of a young-earth view propose exotic mechanisms to stretch preservation over millions of years. Yet these stretch credibility when weighed against observable decay rates. The simplest and most biblically consistent explanation is rapid, catastrophic burial thousands of years ago. The Flood provides the scale, energy, and chemistry needed. Dinosaur (and Permian) soft tissues, as documented by researchers like Schweitzer and Armitage, are not anomalies. They are expected remnants of a world overwhelmed by judgment and then reshaped by God's mercy.

Implications for Faith and Science

The pervasive preservation of soft tissues across diverse fossil specimens carries profound implications that reach far beyond laboratory curiosity. It directly upends the assumption of deep time for fossils. Organic decay rates are well-established: proteins such as collagen have half-lives measured in thousands of years at best under ideal conditions, and far shorter in most burial environments. The presence of flexible vessels, intact cells, stretchable fibrillar bone, peripheral nerves, and blood-like remnants in specimens from Permian through Cretaceous layers is chemically and biologically

incompatible with tens or hundreds of millions of years. These materials should have long since degraded into indistinguishable mineral replacements or vanished entirely. Their persistence demands rapid entombment and immediate geochemical stabilization, precisely the conditions provided by the global Flood.



Dr Wright in Dr Armitage's Lab

This evidence powerfully supports the Flood narrative in Genesis. The catastrophic mixing of ecosystems, superheated mineral-rich waters from the fountains of the great deep, volcanic inputs, and rapid burial in oxygen-poor sediments created the exact geochemical perfect storm needed for silica saturation and other mineral sealing processes. What we observe is not isolated anomalies but a widespread pattern consistent with a single, recent, globe-engulfing event. The fact that soft tissue preservation appears across multiple ages and taxa, from dinosaurs to Permian amphibians, demonstrates the pervasive, uniform action of one massive watery catastrophe rather than millions of years of separate, localized burials.



Nanotyrannus Nerve observed by Dr Wright

These discoveries confirm the accuracy and reliability of God's record in Scripture. The Bible presents a young earth, a historical global Flood as divine

judgment, and a subsequent reshaping of the world. Dinosaur and Permian soft tissues stand as physical witnesses crying out from the rocks in agreement with that history. They affirm that the biblical timeline is not metaphorical but literal and trustworthy. Just as Noah's Ark preserved a remnant through the waters, the Flood itself preserved these biological treasures as testimony for future generations.

For non-biblical paleontologists committed to evolutionary deep time, these findings represent a growing embarrassment and a serious scientific crisis. Initial reports were met with skepticism and accusations of contamination, yet repeated confirmations, from Schweitzer's *T. rex* to Armitage's *Triceratops* nerves and Permian blood clots, have made dismissal untenable. As more specimens from additional animals and ages reveal the same delicate structures, the challenge intensifies. Researchers must either invoke increasingly ad hoc, untestable mechanisms to preserve organics for eons or confront the collapse of the millions-of-years framework. Many respond with silence, redefinition of terms, or appeals to unknown exceptional conditions, yet none adequately explain the data within a deep-time paradigm. The soft tissue revolution is quietly undermining the foundational assumption of uniformitarian geology and evolutionary biology.

In the end, dinosaur soft tissue is one of the strongest physical evidences for a recent creation and global Flood. It declares the glory of God, exposes the fragility of man-centered science, and calls believers to renewed confidence in Scripture. As we examine the fossil evidence, including the remarkable *Triceratops* specimens and Permian bones studied by Dr. Armitage, we see not random death but ordered testimony: a young earth, a global catastrophe, and a Creator who remembers mercy in the midst of judgment. Dinosaur soft tissue, sealed by the very minerals stirred up in the Flood, is one more voice crying out from the rocks, declaring the glory of God and the truth of His Word.

References

Armitage, Mark H. "First Report of Peripheral Nerves in Bone from *Triceratops horridus* Occipital Condyle." *Microscopy Today*, 2021. Available at Dinosaur Soft Tissue Research Institute (DSTRI): <https://dstri.org>.

- Armitage, Mark H., and Kevin L. Anderson. "Soft Sheets of Fibrillar Bone from a Fossil of the Supraorbital Horn of the Dinosaur *Triceratops horridus*." *Acta Histochemica* 115, no. 6 (2013): 603–608.
- Armitage, Mark H. Various reports on Permian soft tissue (e.g., blood clots in *Eryops* and *Cacops* vascular canals and peripheral nerves), Dinosaur Soft Tissue Research Institute publications and updates, 2020–2023.
- Akahane, H., et al. "Rapid Wood Silicification in Hot Spring Water: An Explanation of Silicification of Wood During the Earth's History." *Sedimentary Geology* 169 (2004): 219–228.
- Ballhaus, C., et al. "The Silicification of Trees in Volcanic Ash: An Experimental Study." *Geochimica et Cosmochimica Acta* 84 (2012): 62–74.
- Boatman, Elizabeth M., et al. "Mechanisms of Soft Tissue and Protein Preservation in *Tyrannosaurus rex*." *Scientific Reports* 9 (2019).
- Chen, G.C. "Treatment of Wood with Polysilicic Acid Derived from Sodium Silicate for Fungal Decay Protection." USDA Forest Service Research (2009).
- Drum, R.W. "Silicification of Wood." Botanical studies using sodium metasilicate solutions (1968).
- Demassa, T., and Boudreaux, D. "Dinosaur Peptide Preservation and Degradation." Creation Research Society Quarterly (2015).
- Götze, J., et al. "Silicification of Wood in the Laboratory." *Ceramics – Silikáty* 52, no. 4 (2008): 268–277.
- Hicks, Hamilton. "Mineralized Sodium Silicate Solutions for Artificial Petrification of Wood." United States Patent US4612050A, September 16, 1986.
- Leo, R.F., and E.S. Barghoorn. "Silicification of Wood." *Botanical Museum Leaflets* (Harvard University) 25 (1976).
- Peng, Y., Han, Y., and Gardner, D.J. "Sodium Silicate Coated Wood." Proceedings of the International Convention of Society of Wood Science and Technology and United Nations Economic Commission for Europe, Timber Committee, Geneva, October 11–14, 2010.
- Peng, Y., Han, Y., and Gardner, D.J. "Southern Pine Impregnated with Silicate Solution Containing Cellulose Nanofibrils." *Holzforschung* 66 (2012): 521–527.
- Schweitzer, Mary H., et al. "Soft-Tissue Vessels and Cellular Preservation in *Tyrannosaurus rex*." *Science* 307, no. 5717 (2005): 1952–1955.

Schweitzer, Mary H., et al. "Soft Tissue and Cellular Preservation in Vertebrate Skeletal Elements from the Cretaceous to the Present." *Proceedings of the Royal Society B* 274 (2007): 183–197.

Senter, Phil J. "Soft Tissues in Fossil Bone." *Palaeontologia Electronica* 25, no. 1 (2022).

Ullman, et al. (reported in Sarfati, Jonathan. "Iron Fails to Preserve Collagen." *Creation* 46, no. 4 (2024)).

Soft Tissue in a 452-Million-Year-Old Crinoid Fossil? By Dr. Robert Wright

<https://www.afloodofhope.com/post/soft-tissue-in-a-452-million-year-old-crinoid-fossil>

This Remarkable Find Should Not Surprise Us. It Affirms the Biblical Flood

A recent article on [Earth.com](https://www.earth.com) highlights a fascinating discovery from a quarry near Québec City: two small fossils of the crinoid *Dendrocrinus simcoensis* preserve delicate soft tube feet in pyrite (fool's gold). These water-filled stalks, used for feeding and gripping in these sea lily-like echinoderms, are exactly the kind of tissue that should have vanished long before fossilization. Yet here they are. Short, blunt nubs less than half a millimeter long, spaced about four per millimeter along the arms, have been replicated in mineral form. Scientists date the fossils to the Ordovician period, 452 million years ago, and call them the oldest known crinoid tube feet on record. The preservation allowed researchers to study feeding posture and spacing in ways usually impossible with hard skeletons alone. They note that the wide spacing and short length break patterns seen in living crinoids and hint at varied feeding strategies in calm, deep water, perhaps a cone-shaped posture rather than the classic upstream fan.

While the researchers celebrate this as a windfall for understanding ancient feeding behaviors, from a biblical perspective this preservation is not a puzzle to be solved by invoking special deep-time conditions. It stands as powerful evidence for the rapid burial and mineralization that occurred during Noah's global Flood, just thousands of years ago.

The Scientific Discovery

Crinoids, often called sea lilies or feather stars, are marine echinoderms with feathery arms used to filter food from the water. Living examples show the intricate design of these creatures, with tube feet along their arms that help capture plankton.

The fossils in question come from what secular geology labels the Ordovician period. The key claim is that soft tissue survived for an alleged 452 million years through pyrite replacement in low-oxygen conditions. The article itself admits these structures “should have vanished.” That admission is telling.

Why the Preservation Challenges Deep Time

Under the uniformitarian assumptions that dominate secular geology, soft watery tissues like tube feet decay rapidly. Even in anoxic settings, the idea that such delicate features could be perfectly replicated in pyrite over hundreds of millions of years strains credibility. The very fact that scientists express surprise at the survival reveals the tension: their timeline predicts disappearance, yet the evidence shows preservation.

This is only a puzzle if one insists on deep time. When we allow for catastrophic conditions, rapid mineralization becomes expected rather than exceptional.

The Biblical Explanation: Rapid Burial in Noah’s Global Flood

The Bible describes the global Flood of Noah’s day in Genesis 6–9. In a single year, “all the fountains of the great deep were broken up, and the windows of heaven were opened” (Genesis 7:11). This catastrophic event produced massive sediment transport, turbulent waters, and in many places rapid burial of marine organisms in fine muds under low-oxygen conditions.

In such an environment, mineral-rich waters and chemical processes associated with decaying organic matter would have enabled swift pyritization. Delicate structures could be replicated in fool’s gold before full decay occurred. The Québec fossils fit perfectly within this model. The layers secular scientists call “Ordovician” are better understood as part of the Flood deposits, laid down rapidly rather than over tens of millions of years.

This is not an isolated case. Similar exceptional preservation, including original soft tissue and biomolecules, appears in fossils across the geologic column, most famously in dinosaur remains “dated” to 65 million years or more. As we have explored through visits to sites around the country, these

finds consistently challenge the assumed ages while fitting the timeline of a recent creation and global Flood.

Pyrite replacement and other rapid mineralization processes documented by creation researchers explain these phenomena without requiring millions of years of slow deposition. The data align with Scripture. The interpretive framework of deep time does not.

Design and Variation Within Created Kinds

God created sea creatures, including echinoderms like crinoids, on Day 5 of Creation Week: “Let the waters abound with an abundance of living creatures” (Genesis 1:20). The tube feet, internal plumbing system, mucus coating, and precise arm structures display purposeful design for feeding in varied current conditions.

The variation observed in the fossil, with its short and widely spaced tube feet, does not require millions of years of evolution. It reflects the built-in diversity and adaptability God placed within the crinoid kind. Post-Flood environments, with their changing currents, temperatures, and ecological pressures, would have selected from existing genetic and epigenetic variation. This is God’s adaptation machine at work, not the invention of new body plans through unguided processes.

As we have discussed in articles on adaptive tracking and post-Flood change, beneficial mutations and trait shifts occur within fixed kinds. They reveal pre-existing information and responsive design, sustained by Christ “who upholds all things by the word of His power” (Hebrews 1:3). Crinoids appear suddenly in the fossil record as fully formed, complex animals, consistent with creation rather than gradual emergence from simpler ancestors. Their basic body plan persists with limited variation, exactly as we would expect from the biblical model.

A Consistent Pattern Supporting Scripture

This Québec discovery joins a broader pattern. Whenever soft tissue, original proteins, or exceptional preservation appears in fossils assigned vast ages, the same tension arises. The preservation mechanisms themselves are not the problem. The assumed ages are. Experiments show that rapid mineralization and replacement can occur on short timescales under the right conditions, conditions abundantly supplied during the Flood.

The fossil record as a whole, with its sudden appearances, ecological sorting, and limited change within kinds, aligns far better with biblical creation and Flood geology than with deep-time evolutionary narratives. Hydrodynamic sorting, ecological zonation, and rapid burial during the Flood provide coherent explanations for what we observe.

Rejoicing in the Evidence and the Hope Ahead

As the apostle Peter warned, scoffers in the last days deliberately forget both the creation and the Flood, assuming “all things continue as they were from the beginning of creation” (2 Peter 3:4). That uniformitarian assumption turns beautiful examples of rapid preservation into artificial puzzles. When we start with God’s Word as our foundation, the evidence makes sense.

This crinoid fossil, with its exquisitely preserved feeding structures, does not extend deep evolutionary time. It testifies to the catastrophic conditions of the Flood and the intricate design of creatures made by Jesus Christ, through whom and for whom all things were created (Colossians 1:16–17).

[Dr. Dan Biddle on Recent Dinosaurs, "PhD PROVES Dinosaurs Lived Recently" on Genesis Apologetics 21m – Highlights on Soft Dinosaur Tissue & Dino Graveyard](#)

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=1Okpf5C2i8E>

The **soft tissue** in dinosaur bones is the case closed against evolution, favoring recent creation and a young earth. Just decades ago all scientists thought all fossils were pure rock.

From 1812-1960 100% of scientists said all fossil bones are stones. Now in 2026 0% of scientists stand by that claim. Yet they won’t let go of millions of years. We find collagen, cartilage, nerve cells, and other soft tissues that shouldn’t last over 100k years, 100x shorter than the dinosaur narratives.

Many scientists hate this soft tissue in fossils research but it's now proven repeatedly.

Mary Schweitzer sent in her sample 17x to the lab because she couldn't believe her eyes that t-rex fossils had soft stretchy tissue. Many others have now repeated her findings.

Evolutionists tried to avoid these soft tissue findings by saying maybe an ostrich sat on the T-rex fossils and leaked collagen into them, or maybe some researcher's makeup fell onto it.

But evolutionists are proven wrong, we have proven on a **molecular** level that these soft tissues exist in the t-rex fossils and the triceratops fossils themselves.

The Morrison Formation:

The Morrison formation is 600k miles 300 ft thick across 13 states, has all Jurassic dinosaurs. A huge mud pancake.

Beyond the Morrison formation it's even bigger, 1800 miles by 1000 miles, the US 'dinosaur kill zone.'

Gen. 8:3 the water went forth and returned, sounds like repeated tsunamis, a perfect description of what we see in the fossil layers.

Dinos are buried in mud sand and ash. The flood initiated in the fountains of the deep, the breaking of the plate tectonics, and this would cause rapid subduction, triggering volcanic eruptions as well.

Transitional Fossils? Archeopteryx?



On pages 54-55, the LTSR authors popularly claim that the “**Archeopteryx**” fossil is a transitional species—a reptile turning into a bird. Is this real evidence of evolution, or is it just a bird? (Image from LTSR included.) Let’s take a closer look.

First, this bird isn’t so unique. This bird with teeth and claws may be like the modern platypus which has some features of one animal type and other features of other types. The platypus has fur, lays eggs, is a mammal, nurses, chews food with plates rather than teeth, & is generally far stranger than the Archeopteryx. There are no transitional fossils linking the platypus to other species. We think we have it all figured out with our classifications, but God reminds us with strange creatures that He is the creator and makes what He wishes.

What about its feathers? There is no viable scientific explanation of how scales would evolve into feathers because it never happened. Archeopteryx has feathers identical to modern feathers. There are no intermediate feathers between a reptile scale and a bird feather. The leg and wing bones of Archeopteryx are hollow like that of a bird. The feathers are well developed for flight, asymmetrically. (Non-flying birds, like penguins, have symmetrical feathers.)

What about its claws and teeth? Other modern birds, such as the ostrich, have 3 claws on each wing, the same as Archeopteryx. The Hoatzin of South America and Touraco of Africa have claws on their wings too. Various modern birds have teeth also, such as the Graylag Goose.

Evolution scientist P. Moody also acknowledges that it's nothing strange for a bird to have teeth. He says, "However, other extinct ancient birds had teeth, and every other category of vertebrates contains some organisms with teeth, and some without (amphibians, reptiles, extinct birds, mammals, etc.)."—*P. Moody, Introduction to Evolution (1970), pp. 196-197



(Image: Graylag Goose with teeth, Wikipedia)

Is Archaeopteryx really a transitional fossil? There are modern birds in the same (Jurassic) period, as well as modern birds before this period. One **evolutionist admitted** that "It is obvious that we must now look for the ancestors of flying birds in a period of time much older than that in which Archaeopteryx lived."—*J. Ostrom, Science News 112 (1977), p. 198.

One **evolutionist textbook plainly admitted** that the entire field of bird evolution is speculative: "The origin of birds is largely a matter of deduction. There is **no fossil evidence** of the stages through which the **remarkable change** from reptile to bird was achieved."—*W.E. Swinton, Biology and Comparative Physiology of Birds, Vol. 1 (1980), p. 1

In conclusion, there are no transitional fossils between this bird and a reptile. This fossil doesn't predate birds; Archeopteryx is just a bird. It is common knowledge that variation within a species allows for differences like this without crossing the species barrier, which cannot be crossed.

About Archeopteryx with Dr Haynes on Institute for Creation Research - Highlights

<https://youtu.be/DYlI6mq850o?si=2y3TJuiuPPaR0rF>

The deinonychus supposed transition from reptile to bird fossil was found 35 miles apart with two different digs 30 years apart and the man riding about it said he has no proof but he also has no doubt. He said it's his belief that this is a transitional fossil. He's operating on a worldview that points him to evolutionary conclusions even without evidence.

The bones weren't right by each other, this probably isn't the same animal. It was also found in different depths.

The secular evolutionist worldview says reptiles before birds but the Bible says birds before land animals.

Archeopteryx is a bird and would have been created on day 5 of the creation and died in the flood.

There are other extinct birds which are similar to Archeopteryx which have the longer tail more pronounced teeth and claws.

When there is filament in dinosaur fossil evolutionists interpret that to me in feathers to promote their dinosaur to bird transition narrative.

The person who analyzed and published archeopteryx believed it was a bird.

You don't find scales on the heads of these birds but evolutionists draw scales on the head of the bird to make it look more like a reptile.

Joel Paleoart with Answers in Genesis on What Dinosaurs Really Looked Like & Birds Aren't Dinosaurs

You've been lied to about how dinosaurs looked – Lecture Highlights

<https://youtu.be/QfIIaUnmGk?si=RXEy3w0p7GWZhQv> on dinosaurs and birds being very different by Joel Paleoart & Answers in Genesis - Highlights

Filament is not the same thing as feathers but in evolutionists interpret it as a reptile having feathers.

We have lots of birds today with claws on their wings and we have lots of fossils of birds with claws and teeth.

When you find fossils of birds usually the beak is not intact and evolutionists portray supposed reptile bird transition creatures without a beak as part of their narrative. In reality we're dealing with birds with wings and feathers on the one hand and on the other hand reptile dinosaurs without wings.

Evolutionists portray some bird fossils as standing upright with a straight neck and with a thick muscular tail and unfolded wings to make them look more like a reptile when they're really just birds.

Scales and feathers are not similar at all.

Agendas in a New Dinosaur Series on Netflix, Pointed out by Answers in Genesis and Joel Paleoart - Highlights & Commentary

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=pM4FVhVxiXU>

This was an excellent video reviewing a Netflix series on dinosaurs, showing the flaws, assumptions, etc.

They push millions of years over and over. They ensure they say the word "millions" tons of times, making it appear like brainwashing.

They speak of the rock layers of Jurassic etc. as though they were eras in time, not just rock layers.

They push the unproven connection between birds and dinosaurs to try and blur the lines between obviously very different kinds of animals.

They don't find feathers on these reptiles, they just chose when they want to throw those in. Scientists have criticized the series for choosing at random when to put feathers on the dinosaurs, despite feathers not being found in the fossils.

An obvious bird fossil with feathers is found, and they animate it as though it were a reptile dinosaur transitioning. They show it with unfolded wings, a straight neck, and other things to make it look more like a reptile. They don't allow for birds living at the same time as dinosaurs, despite the fossils clearly

showing that.

They show eggs saying there is a new species emerging from the eggs, but they don't mention who laid those eggs.

Note: You might call this the 'trans-species' movement, scary stuff, and definitely non-Biblical. End note.

They allow for rain for millions of years, but get mad when Christians say it rained 40 days at Noah's flood.

They show flooding, needing to describe the marine fossils in high places, but the flooding is never allowed to be a global flood.

They make claims of dramatically fluctuating weather.

They promote death before Adam's fall in their claims of evolution before man.

Note: Of course evolutionists don't recognize the reality of Adam at all. This is multiple levels of heresy. End note.

They show death is the hero.

Dragons or Dinosaurs? Creation or Evolution? By Darek Isaacs – Documentary Highlights & Commentary

Produced by Cloud Ten Pictures. These notes are in my own words and do not represent all the ideas in the presentation.

See https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=zgLDE_6TepM

The word dinosaur was invented after the Bible was published. They use jackal now instead of dragon because of the fear of evolutionists, but the word should be translated as dinosaur based on the descriptions of historians.

There is much lore of dragons across cultures.

One Indian legend said a giant bird that lived in the mountaintops would bring thunder when it visited them. For a bird to live on the mountaintops, it would need the updraft from a thunderstorm to get there, hence the Indians' saying it was a bird that brought lightning.

Many things that existed in the supposed age of dinosaurs are still around today, like Oaks and other trees.

We find most fossils in sediment deposited by water, like in Noah's flood, when suddenly massive amounts of water came. Most bones are very scattered since they are devoured when they fall to the floor of the ocean. Also, calcium carbonate is soluble in seawater. Hence, forming fossils is a rare thing to happen.

Note: But the near-complete skeletons and fossil graveyards indicate rapid burial. End note.

Mt. Saint Helens formed many layers of sediment, not taking hundreds of years to form but one day. This surprised geologists.

Measure current lava flow from Hawaii, and you won't get 0 years old, but ancient.

As one study, RATE, shows, radioactive decay rates have been increased in certain periods of history.

The presentation goes over evidence for the Earth being about 6000 years old. (about 50min in).

Lava flow in a canyon (that is younger than the canyon) is measured as older than the canyon. More C14 discussion is presented.

The presentation goes over dinosaur bones found with blood cells in them; this is fresh marrow with soft blood vessels. This could not be if that animal died many years ago!

Charles Lyell said, "I am sure you may get into Q.R. [Quarterly Review] what

will **free the science from Moses**, for if treated seriously, the party are quite prepared for it.” (June 14 letter to George Poulett Scrope)

These teachings brought on statements such as, “Lyell saw himself as **"the spiritual saviour of geology**, freeing the science from the **old dispensation of Moses**.” (Porter, Roy S. (July 1976). "Charles Lyell and the Principles of the History of Geology". The British Journal for the History of Science. **32** (2): 91–103.)

If life were to go from microbes to man, it would take **more like googol years** than billions of years; evolutionists say billions of years is **a way of saying an impossible thing can happen**.

They say that over billions of years, anything is possible, but would you claim a person could **win the lottery daily for 100 years**? This is the type of claim evolutionists make.

Evolutionists say the simplest life was long ago, like a jellyfish, but they actually have about as much DNA as we do. (Not so simple, are they?)

If you want to say things are by chance in being formed, what is the difference between billions of years vs. thousands of years?

There should be millions of species between other species in evolution, but there are not. Darwin's stages of animals, etc., are no longer what we use.

*Note: Remember this key from Meyer in 'Darwin's Doubt: ' With how much we know about the fossil record now, we can't claim that these transitional fossils might be out there somewhere. It's like reaching into a bag of marbles and pulling out blue, red, and yellow. **At first, you think the whole rainbow might be in there, but as you keep pulling out marbles and only get the same three colors, you can't keep saying that it's likely the whole rainbow is in there, much less the whole spectrum of colors between each color!** End note.*

Newton, Boyle, Maxwell, Faraday, Carver, Pasteur—all these were Christian Bible-believing people. They helped open us to more science than most.

Note: I encountered a rather upset fellow once who rejoiced that religion is no longer involved in science. I can see where he is coming from, but the larger reality is that 1. Christianity gave us science as we know it, calling for a study of nature as a predictable, reliable thing made by a single God abiding by

fixed laws, and 2. The spirit of God inspired godly men in the past to lead to the greatest discoveries. Today, we have fewer discoveries about nature, and many false theories prevail in our atheistic climate, without the spirit of God (who is Truth) to help us navigate. 3. Today we are ever seeking and never finding the truth. Sure, we are making advancements in technology, but no new laws of nature are being discovered, and therefore, many aspects of nature's puzzle remain unsolved. End note.

Job 40 says, "I made (this beast of beasts) **along with you.**" Some Hebrew experts say it was the largest land animal God made. It was said to have a tail like a Cedar tree. Consider the Cedars of Lebanon, they are huge. Another place says arms like great bars of iron.

Job 41 describes Leviathan as leaving a trail in the mud that shatters pots, etc. God describes it as having layers of shields with no gaps between them and breathing fire. There is a beetle that shoots hot liquid at things, the electric eel that electrocutes, and the cobra that shoots poison into the eye. There is a hollow part in the dinosaur's body with an unknown function; it could be for mixing chemicals to make fire.

Were dinosaurs on Noah's ark? The average size of a dinosaur is that of a goat. Animals were on the boat so they could reproduce. Science today teaches that they could reproduce at age 8 to 10, so young dinosaurs would have been brought. Many of them would have been wiped out by the flood.

There are legends of hunting dragons; that is one way there are fewer of them.

The ice age after Noah's flood could have killed many dinosaurs, as well.

Note: There are many ice age theories, ranging from many to none. End note.

Many advocate that humans came into existence randomly without a Creator, and they often do this, so they don't have to be accountable to a Creator. When Christ returns, evolutionary theory will utterly disappear.

Note: And we won't just say 'God used evolution.' The timetables are unnecessary when you're dealing with supernatural creation. Jesus instantly turns water into wine, heals the sick, calms the storm, etc. One by one, every aspect of the theory of evolution will fall into oblivion as the truth shines forth. End note.

Evolutionary theory is driven by paradigms, not by evidence.

The Appellation and the Himalayan mountains were formed by the flood. Fossils are present in them because animals were crushed in the flood.

Note: Another theory is that the waters went high above these mountains. Maybe it's some of both. End note.

Today, one of the biggest reasons they can't believe in Jesus is because of what they teach in science class in school; **based on what they teach in school, the Bible does not make sense!**

Today's science is proving that processes that were thought to take millions of years can be done in very short periods of time.

Note: This is true from fossilization to coal formation to layer deposition to canyon formation, etc. End note.

Man's views and opinions are always changing; rest your hopes and views on God's wisdom, not man's.

Forensic scientists don't see crimes; they make conclusions and suggestions on what could have happened. The judge and jury will determine the case by eyewitness. This is what the Bible does for us.

Dr. Kent Hovind Creation Seminar 3: Dinosaurs & The Bible – Highlights & Commentary

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Q2zkJG1_MbM

Cryptozoology is the study of hidden animals.

National geographic claims that no human being has ever seen a live dinosaur. They have not talked to everyone who has ever lived so they can't know that? They can only believe it.

The fact that God created the heaven and the Earth in six days is part of the ten commandments written on Stone!

Psalm 24 speaks of a water creation. Psalm 136 says God stretched out the Earth above the waters.

Most of the water on the surface of the Earth now used to be beneath the crust.

Note: I would say the flood was more of the continents sinking down into surrounding waters and then going back up after the flood, like an immersion baptism. Hovind's view is that the oceans weren't in existence on Earth's surface until after the flood, that the single land mass (Pangea) was simply all of Earth pre-ocean, and that there was no splitting of continents, that all are connected by crust under the oceans. This is an interesting view, but I prefer the theory of Earth's land beginning as sort of precipitating out of the waters, forming something of a single island super-continent, which indeed split at the flood and will, in fact, return back together. The Egyptians have a legend about the first land coming up from out of the waters. End note.

Note: Latter-day Saint Commentary: Here is a passage from the D&C about continents returning to their original joined position: "He shall command the great deep, and it shall be driven back into the north countries, and the islands shall become one land; and the land of Jerusalem and the land of Zion shall be turned back into their own place, and the earth shall be like as it was in the days before it was divided" (D&C 133:23–24). End note.

Only 3% of the world today is habitable for men; God designed the world to be inhabited, and it used to be more habitable.

Billy Graham claimed that dinosaurs were dead before man arrived on Earth, and this is wrong as it places death before sin.

Noah was smart enough to know that he could have brought baby dinosaurs on the ark which wouldn't take up so much room. The biggest dinosaur egg ever found is smaller than a football.

Genesis 7 is clear: Noah only had to bring the various kinds of animals; he didn't have to bring every specific variety.

Noah only had to bring those in who's nostrils was the breath of life, and only those who were on dry land. Bugs would survive a flood easily, whenever there is flood waters receding you see there are many bugs.

Many experts say there are just about 8,000 basic kinds of animals in the world – these could easily fit on the ark. Furthermore, if you just talked 60 words per minute you could name all 8,000 animals in just over 2 hours; thus we see Adam well could have named all the animals in one day.

Atheists claim that Noah could not have put all the animals on the ark but they don't know how big the ark was, and they don't know which animals were brought! Ask them these questions, they say, "I don't know, I just know he couldn't do it!"

One textbook claims that the percentage of oxygen was zero near Earth's beginning, but the rocks absorbed it. Absorbed what, the non-existent oxygen? Make up your mind!

Then it says it rained for millions of years making oceans, and there were complex chemicals in the waters. The book says progress from complex chemicals to the first living organism is very slow. That's right; it's so slow that it doesn't even happen! They claim that the first life must have emerged from organic soup. And apparently, that first life form found someone to marry and something to eat and slowly evolved into what we are today. Therefore, they claim your great-grandpa **was soup**!



(Image from Hovind's slides.)

Most atheists do not know what they believe. You have to tell them - 20 billion years ago, there was a big bang, and 4.6 billion years ago, Earth cooled down, and it rains on rocks for millions of years, making soup, then the soup came alive 3 billion years ago.

One atheist professor said, "How can you believe that all the dogs in the world today came from a single set of prototypical parent dogs on Noah's ark?" Hovind responded to the atheist Professor, "But you are teaching that all the dogs in the world today came from a rock!"

Atheists will claim we did not come from a rock, that we came from a macromolecule, but where did that come from... From the oceans of prebiotic soup... And where did that come from? It came from rain on rocks for millions of years... So yes, they do indeed claim we came from rock!

Jeremiah foresaw the false evolutionary doctrines among us. He said, "Saying

to a stock thou art my father and **to a stone thou has brought me forth**"
Jeremiah 2:27



There are 270 flood legends around the world.

Noah would have lived long enough to tell of the flood to Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob.

There's a Hawaiian legend of Nuhu, who had a giant house on a canoe, and everyone who wasn't on it was killed by a flood.

The Chinese story of Fuhi is that he, his wife, three children, and their wives were all on a boat and survived a flood when everyone else perished.

There's an Indian legend of everyone dying in a flood that covered the highest mountains, with only one family who survived.

Maybe the Atlantis legend is another flood legend.

In Turkey, there are signs showing the way to Noah's boat.

Noah was in the boat for a year but everything being covered completely by water may have only been a few weeks. Perhaps it was too muddy, perhaps no trees survived and he had to wait in the boat a while.

The Bible says the ark landed on the mountains (plural) of Ararat, so it may not be on the specific mountain of Ararat, which some claim. The ark may have landed in a valley because it would seem unlikely to land on a mountain when the waters are receding.

The Ron Wyatt ark finding has a teardrop shape with the pointed end uphill, so it's not just lava flow around an object. There are rivets it was held together by. The government of Turkey affirms that this is Noah's Ark, and they have built a visitor center. The standard Egyptian Cubit is 20.6 inches, and this ark exactly matches the biblical description based on that length. It is about 2/3

the size of the Titanic, about two football fields long. Drogue stones are present to stabilize the boat in a storm. The ark did not have any masts; it was designed to float, not sail.

Note: If God wanted the ark to go somewhere, he could blow it there by the winds and currents. End note.

Note: Latter-day Saint Commentary: This is what God did with the Jaredite vessels. They had no steering mechanisms, God brought them to where he wanted them to be. I do believe the ark started in America and went to Turkey, as I believe the main antediluvian patriarchs lived in America. There are records of the Clovis people of ancient America existing before the flood. This mystery is not too important for the purposes of this book. End note.

Many longboats built out of wood have survived; the Chinese had some very big ones some time ago.

The moon pool on the floor of the boat helps it not to snap in half, it's a big hole with tall walls on the sides. It relieves the stress as you go over the waves. It also acts like a giant piston to pump air into the boat every time you have a wave, and it would be a good place to dump garbage.

The question is not **how** did the dinosaurs go extinct but did they go extinct at all? They are good at getting us to argue about the wrong question.

An example of getting us to argue about the wrong question is the question of whether creation science should be taught in public schools. This question must be preceded by the more important question of whether we should have public schools at all! There are many good public School teachers, but the curriculum they work from is corrupt; it is unfixable. Get your kids out of public school if you can. The 10th Amendment says our government has no business in being involved in education. Public schools are part of progress toward a New World Order, and Karl Marx is clear about this in The Communist Manifesto item number 10, which is free public education.

After the flood, people only lived 400 then 200, then 100 years. It's possible that dinosaurs could not live long enough to reproduce after the flood in the new environment.

Sir Richard Owen invented the word dinosaur in 1841. Before that, they were known as dragons.

Dragons are mentioned in the bible 35 times. The dragon population went down because no one wanted to live by a dragon. Many ancient recipes call

for dragon bones as a part of medicine.

Gilgamesh slew a dragon. The Babylonian God Marduk is shown on top of a dragon. The Chinese had to kill dragons, there are all kinds of legends.

Sure, there were fire-breathing dragons, the Bible talks about fiery flying serpents. The Bible very plainly says fire goes out of the mouth of a beast. Note- this gives more support to the idea that some of the serpents mentioned in various scriptures are more like dragons than little snakes.

In the apocryphal account, Daniel 14 (????), slays a legendary dragon that people worship. Daniel knew science, so he used sticky pitch, hair (which cannot be digested), and fat (which is very salty tasting, and most animals like salty-tasting things). It made the dragon burst asunder.

Saddam Hussein thought he was Nebuchadnezzar reincarnated. He rebuilt the ancient city of Babylon. The original city was destroyed around 600 BC, and much of it was buried in the sand, which was preserved quite well. They found carvings of lions and dragons. Nebuchadnezzar had a **dragon** in a cage.

There's a Roman mosaic with two long-neck dinosaurs.

In 275 AD, Saint George slays the dragon. This is very famous - there are carvings of it all over.

Beowulf slays a dragon by pulling his arm off.

There's a depiction of dinosaurs holding a sheep between their mouths.

Gargoyles on cathedrals are from a legend of a gargoyle coming up out of the water in France.

From stamps to coins to legends, **dragons are everywhere throughout world history.**

An Irish writer said they killed a dragon that had nails on its tail. The stegosaurus has large spikes on its tail.

Viking ships have dragons on them. An 11th-century Viking depiction shows a man being swallowed by a dragon.

See the book *After The Flood* by Bill Cooper about Noah's sons and genealogy, etc. He demonstrates that many of the ancient people fought dragons.

A Norwegian hero slew a dragon.

Marco Polo said the emperor in China was raising dragons to pull chariots in his parades.

In 1611 old Chinese law books tell about the post of royal dragon feeder.

A city in France was renamed Merluk to honor the man who slew the dragon there.

There's an Indian picture of a dinosaur on the Grand Canyon walls. A scientist in 1925 reported on the dinosaur drawings on the Grand Canyon walls and said these drawings completely upset all of their theories.

In true science when the facts don't match your theory, you throw out your theory. But they don't have any theory to replace evolution other than God, so they keep evolution.

Note: Evolution is so far gone that no amount of tweaking is appropriate. Honest scientists should limit evolution to small changes within a same species to adapt to an environment. All of cosmic and macro evolution from one species into another is unobservable, and has been proven wrong by many findings. Evolution theory is on its way out. It collapses under the evidence, which is why government money (for example, public school agenda and bias in academic establishments funded by government grant money) must be used to prop it up. End note.

They used to say dinosaurs went extinct 12 million years ago, now they are saying dinosaurs went extinct 65 million years ago.

In 1770 some textbooks said the Earth is 70,000 years old. 1905 they say 2 billion. 1969 it's 3.5 billion. Today it's 4.6 billion. The Earth is getting older at the rate of 21 million years per year, 40 years per minute.

Note: Recently they've been calling for yet another doubling of the age of the universe to around 28 billion years old. End note.

Many walls have ancient carvings of dinosaurs. Blanding Utah has cliff wall carvings of dinosaurs. Australia paintings show an Aboriginal running away from a long necked dinosaur. In Canada there are dinosaur cliff drawings and Indian legends of the great animal that lived in the lake. Despite all this evidence, we have scientists claiming no one has ever seen a dinosaur.

The Ica Stones: in the Nazca desert there are giant images of a spider with one

leg slightly longer, they thought these were incompetent drawings, but it turns out that's how the spider appears during a short period of time for reproduction. This was a tiny, rare spider and you would have needed a magnifying glass to even know about the leg lengthening. 2000-year-old Nazca burial stones show dinosaurs, brain surgery, putting on artificial limbs, steam engines, etc.

About 500 of these stones show dinosaurs with people.

There's an ancient depiction of a dinosaur with circularized skin patterns and we have now also found dinosaur skin with the same pattern.

There are 56,000 ceramic figurines of dinosaurs in Mexico in the basement of one house.

There's a Roman sword with a man and dinosaur on it. Scientists said it must be fake because they know man and dinosaur did not live at the same time.

There are hundreds of sea monster sightings in logbooks of navigations at sea. A 60 ft Sea monster was seen swimming under someone's boat.

There are stories of a giant octopus pulling large ships underwater. There's been several finds of massive octopus. Squid and octopus never stop growing.

The Behemoth of the Bible cannot be an elephant or hippopotamus as some Bible reference books claim. The Behemoth has a tail like a cedar tree, and elephants have tiny tails. Behemoth is probably the Brachiosaurus.

Boys, don't touch girls until you're married to them.

Proverbs 6:26 says the adulterous will hunt for the precious life (and not find it).

For the last 200 years children's books have began by saying that dinosaurs lived "millions of years ago."

We need hundreds of creation science museums, go start one.

Dinosaurs that may still be alive:

Communists go places and kill tons of people and claim they have liberated them.

The canopy of water in ancient times over Earth may have created an

environment for long life of humans and animals and this could result in large size.

Note: Several assumptions here, but it's a neat idea. We know antediluvian man and beast had longer lifespans, but we don't know how, or in what manner the water over Earth operated as it is not observable today, assuming it is different from today's atmosphere. End note.

*Note: There's also a fascinating **vision** a man reported having in a near death experience where **he saw an ice canopy** around the pre-flood earth! The man is Ralph Verlin Jensen, and he posted the video on his channel Taught by Christ. Here is the link:*

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=MQ7P5EAlbbk&t=37s> Minute 4:30 through 8 is particularly where he talks about this, talking about unfiltered light never entering the atmosphere before the flood, hence no rainbows were seen before the event, and a more tropical Earth pre-flood. He calls it "a big bubble of ice." End note.

There's a large unexplored swamp in Africa the size of Illinois. In the early 1900s, there were reports of living dinosaurs in that swamp of Africa. There are massive swarms of mosquitoes like swarms of dust in this swamp. In 1980 there was a report of a dinosaur in this swamp as well. Natives who live near the unexplored African swamp report several large dinosaur findings, such as the Mokele Mbembe.

Note: I went looking for the Mokele in Africa in 2024 and heard some fascinating testimonials of sightings from villagers in remote places. End note.

Animals are good at avoiding detection.

See Hovind's book Claws, Jaws and Dinosaurs - a middle school-aged text about living dinosaurs.

A meticulous recorder of facts wrote of seeing a dinosaur in the Amazon jungle.

The Scientific American paper is now very careful to not include anything that would support creation science.

Recently, a giant snake swallowed a human.

Colonel Faucet said he shot and killed a 62 ft. anaconda and the natives reported that there are many much bigger. A 98 ft. snake was recently killed with machine gun, it was two feet in diameter. There's a snake with a 5 ft. long head. A 130 ft long snake with a 15 ft. diameter was found in Peru 1997.

There was a 150 ft long snake carcass floating on a river.

The Amazon River is often over 9 miles wide.

The Scotland **Loch Ness** (lake) is up to 900 ft. deep in some places; it is several miles wide and so big that everyone in the world could drown in it at the same time. The lake is not only large but includes a network of caves in which the monster could hide. The lake was hidden behind a mountain, and they eventually put a road to it. Many sightings of the Loch Ness monster were recorded once the road was built. The first year they put the road in, there were 52 separate sightings, and now, there are around 11,000. Alexander Campbell, the longtime game warden of Loch Ness, has seen the monster more than 10 times. A Loch Ness sighting was recorded in the Reader's Digest magazine, but they intentionally excluded the head from the picture. The main popular Loch Ness picture is one that they declared a fake after the man who took it died, so he couldn't defend the claim.

Scientists repeatedly throw out all of the evidence of recent dinosaur sightings due to evolution theory.

In China Russia etc. there are many reports of large dinosaur-like sea creatures washing up on the shore in the last century.

We have Swedish and Norwegian artwork depicting dinosaurs.

People frequently say that these sea monster sightings are a basking shark, but the descriptions do not match. Some say that these sea creatures are whales, but whales do not have long necks. Many have reported plesiosaurus sightings.

See the book Shipwrecks and Sea Monsters, as well as the book Mysterious Sea Monsters of California Central Coast.

In 1973, a city passed a law making it illegal to harm the White River monster; it was so well known.

There are various instances of coincidental misses of attaining stirring evidence of living dinosaurs.

Note: It seems the Lord and His angels are testing people's faith, keeping these animals hidden. And no one believes the reports when they are seen. The devil has overcome the saints on the topic of science and the true history of

Earth. Many witnesses have been given of the truth of these things, but it remains true that the Lord will try our faith. End note.

Note: Latter-day Saint Commentary: 3 Nephi 26:11 says the Lord intentionally tests our faith. Remember, life is a test.

The Lake Champlain monster has been seen many times. It's about 30 feet long, weighing 3,000 to 5,000 lbs.

Isaiah 27 speaks of “dragons in the sea.”

Five teenagers scuba diving in the Massachusetts sunken ship were caught in a storm and dragged out to sea. Only one survived an attack from a long-necked sea creature. The neck appeared to be a long 10-ft Pole straight out of the water. A bulb-like structure was on top of the head. It had green eyes, oval pupils, a 12 ft. long neck, and a round green color head like an elongated turtle. The next morning, the surviving teen was found by a rescue unit. A stepmother of one of the men who died approached Dr. Hovind and affirmed the account after he told it.

A bus full of Christian students on a trip was driving, and everyone saw a dinosaur; they thought people would think they were crazy if they told.

Note: it would make sense for God to bless Christian students with a rare opportunity like this; signs follow belief. See Mark 16:17-18. End note.

Note: Latter-day Saint Commentary: See also Ether 12:6 on signs following faith. End note.

Dr. Hovind interviewed over 100 people who said they had seen a living dinosaur. Just about every week, Dr. Hovind gets calls from people who claim to have seen these living dinosaurs. There have been 20,000 reported sightings of living dinosaurs in the last century.

There have been various living pterodactyl sightings. A man from Kenya reported pterodactyls in their village with about a 4-foot wingspan and a bump on the back of the head; he asked Hovind, “why do your schools in America say they lived millions of years ago?” Hovind replied, “because we are dumb over here.”

These living pterodactyls have been described as lizards with wings like a bat. Pterodactyls have skin, not feathers, and this is what the reports describe.

In Venezuela people talked about a giant bat that would capsize canoes.

Shown a picture of a pterodactyl the natives explained that this was the bat and even today they will not fish or drink from the river in fear of the creature.

A doctor from Indonesia verified that living dinosaurs exist in their village, and again was puzzled at why in America we teach these animals lived millions of years ago.

A 14-foot wingspan bird was seen off the coast of Alaska recently.

Natives told settlers to be careful of the giant Thunderbird. A Sioux Indian saw one get struck by lightning they found it and it had a 20 ft. wingspan with a bony bump on the back of its head. The Thunderbird was a pterodactyl!

An Indian prayer stick shows the head of a pterodactyl.

An Indian tribe had a painting of a pterodactyl on a cliff wall about how there used to be a giant bird who would come and carry off people.

Then their Chief prayed to the great spirit about how to take care of this bird and the great spirit showed him away to kill this bird.

Satan is using dinosaurs to turn our kids away from God, and we need to set the record straight.

1st Timothy says women should dress modestly.

1 Corinthians 11 says men should not have long hair. The Bible says to let no corrupt communication leave your mouth, so you should not swear or engage in other idle speech; the Bible says you'll have to give an account for every idle word.

Psalm 101:3 says I will set no wicked thing before mine eyes: this should warn us about television choices. Eph 5:19 says use spiritual songs and hymns.

Paul used creation as his means of evangelism when he taught the people on Mars Hill about the unknown God who created the world.

Note: Not everyone knows about scripture or religion, but everyone knows about nature, so this is a terrific way to connect. End note.

Hovind says feel free to copy and spread around his videos. He says feel free to use his material however you want. He says if there's something in there you don't like, edit it out. He says to eat the meat and spit out the bones, which is a very good lesson. He says to copy everything he does.

Note: bravo, Hovind, this is the spirit of Zion! End note.

Dr. Hovind spoke some 800 times in one year; he says it's better to burn out than to rust out, and a lot of Christians are rusting out (not doing much).

There's not tons of pictures of dinosaur sightings because it happens quickly; it's like a car wreck, you'll often see the aftermath but not the actual event.

Note: and far less likely to be caught than even a car wreck, these animals live deep in nature where we do not frequent. End note.

The video includes an interview Hovind did with a lady who saw the champ lake monster who also has a stirring photograph.

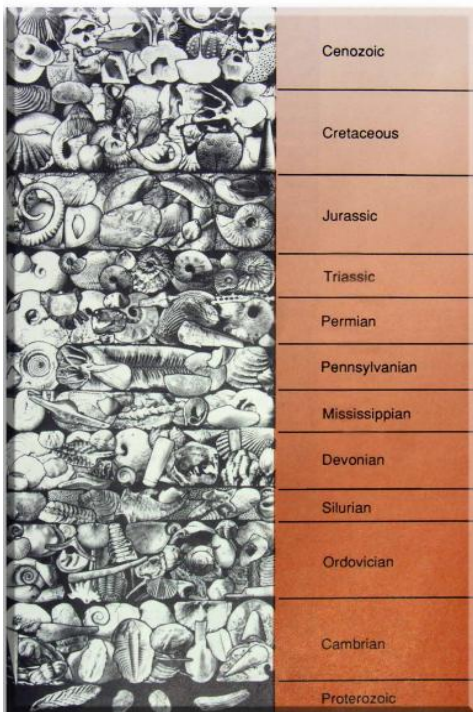
Many who have seen these things do not tell about them at the risk of others thinking they are insane.

Note: It's the same for scientists with evidence against evolution; they often keep quiet to avoid ridicule and their careers being shot down. End note.

PART 5: THE FABRICATED GEOLOGIC

COLUMN

Geological Time Scale With Evolution of Life Through the Fossil Record (U. S. Geological Survey)



Insisting on a Common Ancestor: Geology's

Column

The complete 'Geologic Column' does not exist anywhere on Earth and was **only built by correlation**, as stated in college geology books:

"Because we **cannot find sedimentary rocks representing all of earth time neatly in one convenient area**, we must piece together the rock sequence from locality to locality. This process of tying one rock sequence in one place to another in some other place is known as

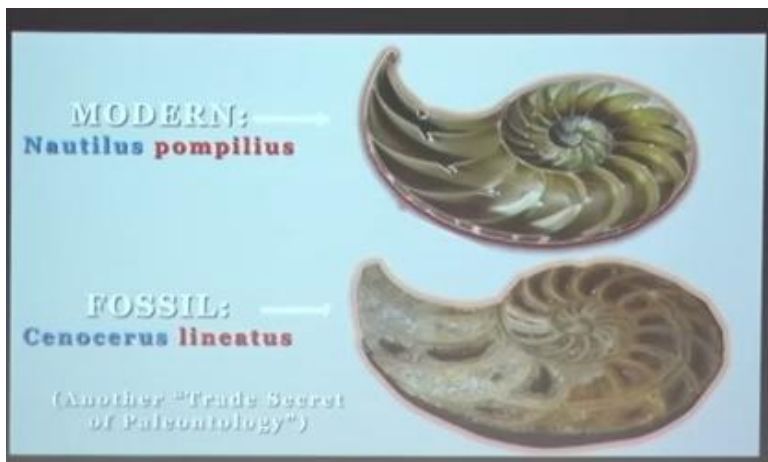
correlation." (Physical Geology, **L. Don Leet** (Harvard) & **Sheldon Judson** (Princeton), p.181.)

Another textbook echoed the concept that evolution was the premise the entire geologic column was based on: "A rock that had an **early form** of an organism was clearly older than rocks containing later forms. Furthermore, all rocks that had the early form, **no matter how far apart those rocks were geographically**, would have to be the same age ... fossil successions made it possible to say that the Cambrian rocks are older than the Ordovician rocks. In this way our geologic time table came into being....**Without the theory of evolution and the interdisciplinary science of paleontology, it could not exist.**" (Geology, **Putman & Bassett**, p.544.)

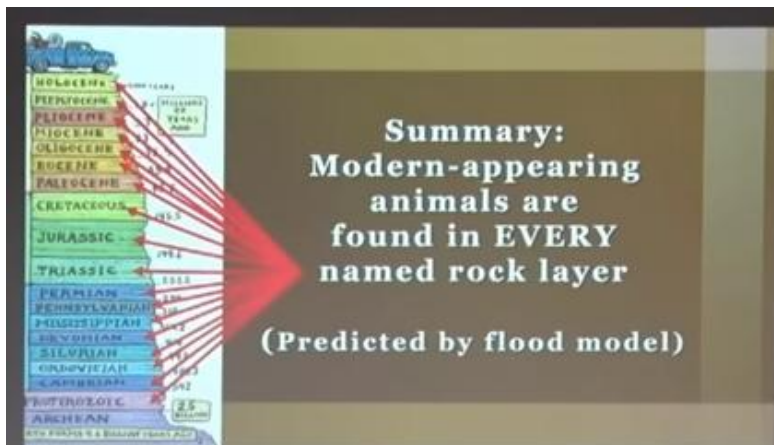
Stacking theory upon theory like this is bound for ruin. Later in the radiometric dating section of this book, we will see how radiometric dates which don't fit the predetermined geologic column are routinely discarded. Just another layer of theories built on theories! Modern science is truly lost!

Dr. Carl Werner has found significant issues with evolution theory. He shows that the Geologic Column is best explained by Noah's flood. Consider:

- Every layer of the Geologic Column has **modern** animals that are alive today.
- They **label** the same animal with different names depending on what layer it appears in to give the illusion of species change. For example, the Nautilus pompilius is the same as the Canocerus Ilaeatus, but they have different names because they appear in different layers, to give the illusion that they have changed over time.



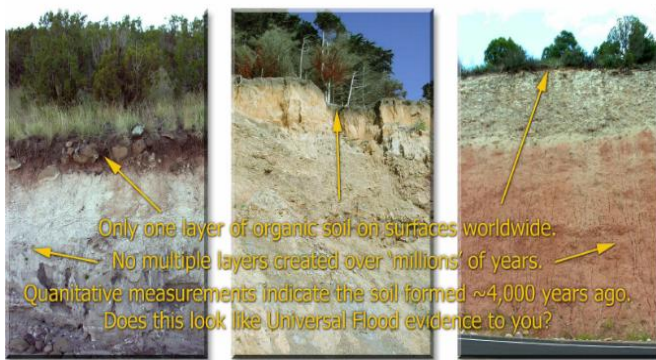
Also consider how different fossils of the same species can have variation, and might be mistaken for different species, such as various dog skulls such as these:



- Every layer of the Geologic Column also has fossils of **saltwater** creatures, this also would be a prediction of the global flood Biblical model.
- Looking at the **skulls** of different types of dogs they look quite different. If you didn't know better, you might label them different species.
- Dr. Werner has found 150 intentional frauds in evolution claims, and documents them in his books.
- See "Scientists Proves Noah's Flood" on Genesis Apologetics: <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ekT6tBXhEoM&list=PLMFvYACK6oX0VtAgXt3EchROuErG2EBUQ&index=2>. Many other presentations of Dr. Werner are available as well.

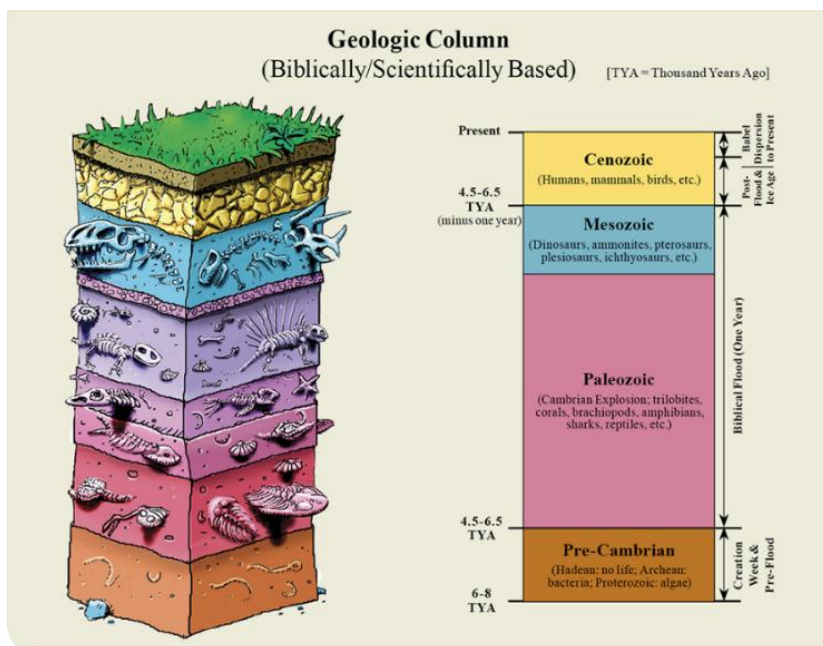
In reality, there aren't neatly organized layers of fossils as the typical column depiction represents, and most fossils are found within the top 100 feet of soil, which is another indication of a recent worldwide flood. When you measure topsoil depths around the world, compare them to deposit rate, and you'll discover they have only been accumulating for about 4500 years, which is when the flood of Noah was. So much for scoffer's claims that there isn't geological evidence for Noah's flood!

Soil Formation Evidence



The above image from Universal Model Vol. 1 Ch. 8 demonstrates that continents weren't subducted and uplifted multiple times as modern geology claims and that the thickness of the organic soil layer on the surface indicates the time each layer took to form. Because soil formation times can be

generally determined, these soil layers indicate a worldwide event that took place only several thousand years ago, depositing the sediment beneath the topsoil layer.



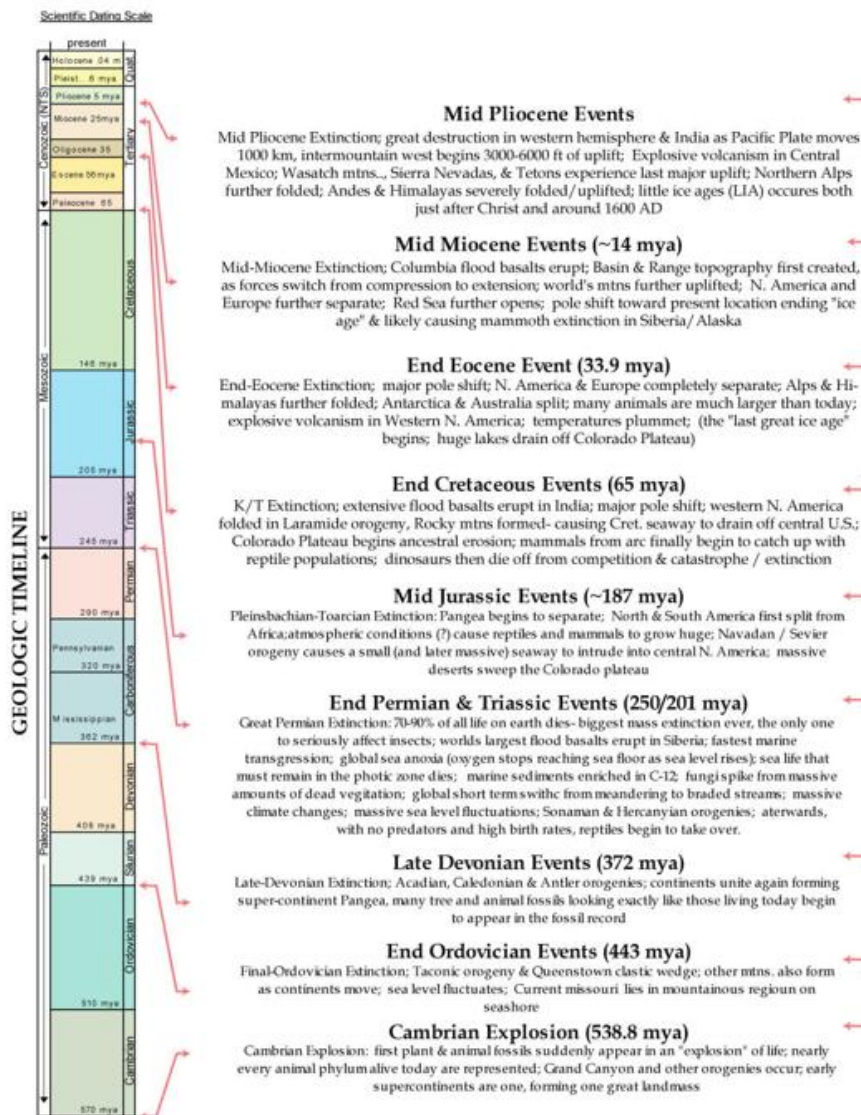
(Above chart from <https://www.mathetis.org/topic/does-the-fossil-record-support-creation-and-the-flood/>. The entire article at that page is very good.)

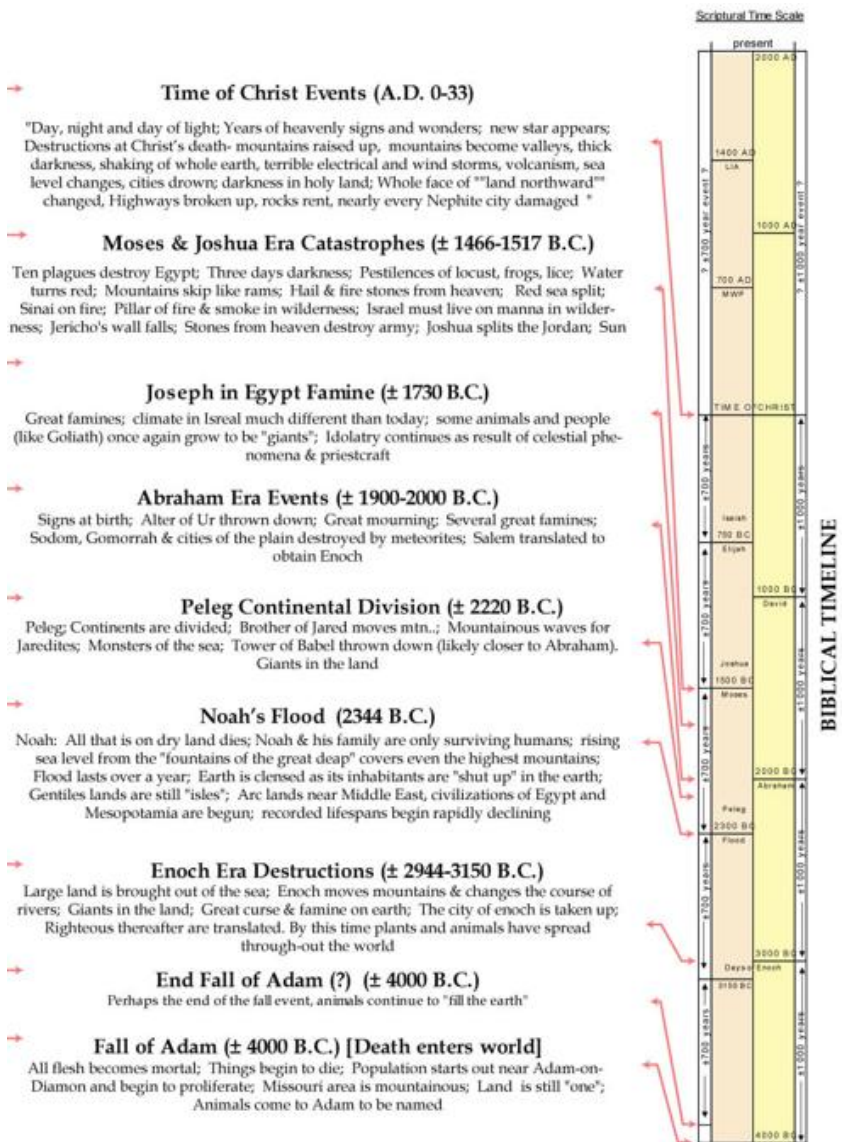
Remember the geologic column really doesn't even exist in nature! But this is a fun depiction showing how young the earth is.

This next more detailed one is from Lance Weaver.

(https://gatheredin.one/wp-content/uploads/2021/02/creationist-timeline.jpg?fbclid=IwZXh0bgNhZW0CMTAAAR0RzMiiH1DJbUcGic-QdkX-Lqkmd3Aci0WcnyvCqLcPUfwLZF9_2R7Xwxg_aem_9mp47BCfQQA4gV2cYokENA)

Though many associate the Cambrian extinction with the flood of Noah, this chart associates the Cambrian extinction with the fall of Adam when death entered the world, and the later Permian/Triassic extinction event with the flood of Noah. The bible timeline is broken into six 1000-year periods.





Brigham Young pointed out limitations of the geologists, and emphasized the instantaneous creative power of God. He said, "Geologists will tell us the earth has stood so many **millions** of years. Why? Because the Valley of the Mississippi could not have washed out under about so many years, or so long

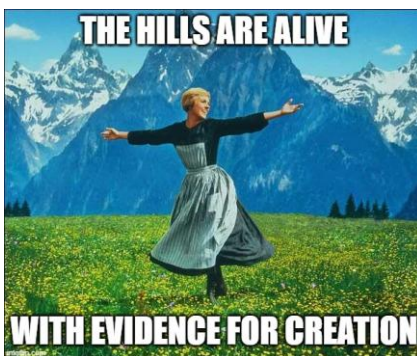
a time. The Valley of Western Colorado, here, not have washed out without such a length of time. **What they know about it?** **Nothing in comparison.** also reason about the age of world by the marvelous specimens of petrification that sometimes discovered. Now can show them plenty of where there are trees, perfect running into the solid rock, perhaps the rock is forty, or a hundred feet above the Yet it is a perfect tree. There bark, there is the heart, and is the outer coating between heart and the bark, all perfect

How long did it take to this tree into rock? We do know. I can tell them, simply

when the Lord Almighty brings forth the power of his chemistry, he can combine the elements and make a tree into rock in **one night or one day, if he chooses**, or he can let it lie until it pulverizes and blows to the four winds, without petrifying, just as he pleases.” (Brigham Young, The Fullness of the Gospel—Its Power to Unite—Its Comprehensiveness—Definition of Its Priesthood—Condition of Apostates; Discourse by President Brigham Young, delivered in the New Tabernacle, Salt Lake City, Sunday Afternoon, August 11, 1872.)

Common Ancestor Conclusion

At the end of the day, if mainstream science claims about common origins of life are true, as suggested by its claims in biology and geology, it paints a very sad picture for mankind. Darwin was honest when he pointed out that, according to his theory of the common origins of all living things, humans have "a pedigree of prodigious length, but **not**, it may be said, of **noble** quality." (**Charles Darwin**, Descent of Man, pp. 164-165, 1897 edition.) **Darwin** went so far as to mock the faithful, saying, “It is only...**arrogance**



could taking do

They the

are we places stone, and fifty, tree. is the there the rock. **make** not this—

which made our forefathers declare that they were **descended from...gods.**"
(The Descent of Man, pp. 31-32)

Guilty as charged. **Luke 3:38** says, "**Adam, which was the son of God.**"
In 1909 the First Presidency of the restored Church said: Mankind are the
"Direct lineal offspring of deity."

Some Christians have tried arranging a geologic column which would align with a biblical timeline. Though I don't put much stock in these exercises, here are some examples of their ideas.

Scientists 200 years ago



Proof that global flood
wiped out dinos 4500yrs ago

ingflip.com

Scientists today



Local flood,
millions of years

Darwin's Doubt by Stephen Meyer, on the Fossil Record & Cambrian Explosion – Book Highlights & Commentary

This was written after his landmark book, "Signature in the Cell." He responds to some criticism of his work there.

This is an excellent and detailed book that thoroughly examines specific evolutionist claims. My notes here only reflect a few general principles.

Here is a summary of the book that he gives toward the end. 4 specific scientific critiques of the inadequacy of Neo-Darwinism in this book are
"1. Neo-Darwinism has no means of efficiently searching available

combination space for functional genes and proteins and consequently

2. It requires unrealistic unrealistically long waiting times to generate even a single new Gene or protein, and the new mechanism cannot produce body plans because
3. Early acting mutations, the only kind capable of generating large-scale changes, are also invariably deleterious and
4. Genetic mutations cannot in any case generate the epigenetic information necessary to build a body plan."

Darwin identified the lack of transitional fossils as a significant problem in his theory. He hoped later researchers would find them, but no one has. Dogmatic Darwinists are more confident about the theory than Darwin himself was. Darwin was at least able to acknowledge the weakness of his theory in the absence of transitional fossils.

One Chinese scientist pointed out that in China, you can't question the government, but you can question Darwin; in America, you can question the government, but you can't question Darwin!

Scientific literature in every field is raising serious problems with Neo-Darwinism.

Darwin was all about a universal common ancestor, and natural selection being how we have variety today.

Evolutionists say the soft and hard parts of animals had to evolve simultaneously, as the animal couldn't survive with just the soft part.

There are many fossils of soft parts of animals which go against Darwin's long-standing theory.

Many fossils are even more complex than the animals of today, which goes against Darwin's simple-to-complex theory.

There are Precambrian fossils of tiny, soft animals, but not of transitional fossils. If even the tiny, soft animals were preserved, then the other transitional animals would have been too. Lots of data indicate that transitional animals never existed, and this is true even though many pre-Cambrian environments were ideal for fossilization.

With how much we know about the fossil record now, we can't claim that these transitional fossils might be out there somewhere. It's like reaching into a bag of marbles and pulling out blue, red, and yellow. **At first, you**

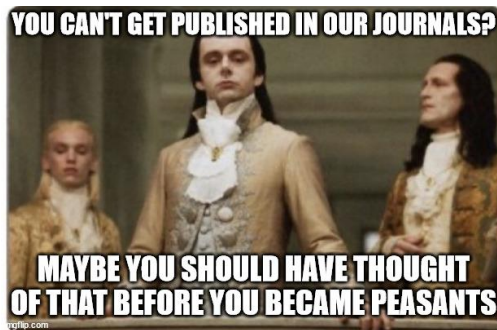
think the whole rainbow might be in there, but as you keep pulling out marbles and only get the same three colors, you can't keep saying that it's likely the whole rainbow is in there, much less the whole spectrum of colors between each color!



Scientists now see that the Cambrian explosion occurred over a much shorter period of time than previously thought.

They say the Cambrian explosion is like one minute of a 24-hour day when compared to the age of the Earth. Evolutionists play word games to try and make it seem like they came in an explosion which took many millions of years, claiming a series of explosions, etc. Evolutionists are continually seeking ways to downplay the apparent explosiveness of the Cambrian explosion.

Meyer engages in numerous debates and discusses some of these in the text.
(Note – he is one of the greatest debaters.)



Many fossils that aren't even animals are claimed to be intermediate animal fossils.

There are many leaps in complexity that occur within a relatively short period of geological time, which natural selection cannot account for. They have been called 'quantum leaps.'

Neo-Darwinism is like classical Darwinism, requiring significant amounts of time, and Neo-Darwinism focuses on mutations. They claim that significant mutations occurred over 40 million years in the Cambrian and Ediacaran periods, which is not nearly enough time for natural selection to make those changes. That's why they call these 'explosions.'

The first principle is not to fool yourself; you are the easiest person to fool. If you fool yourself, you'll fool others.

They **come up with names for intermediate** branches on their phylogenetic tree when no discoveries of those animals have been made, it's just a name, a **placeholder!**

Scientists will admit amongst themselves the weak points of their theories, but in public, they deny or undermine those points.

Homologous structures were once considered signs of a common designer until evolutionary theorists imposed their dogmatic view on everyone, insisting that these actually meant a common ancestor.

Evolutionists downplay the Cambrian explosion, claiming that millions of years of evolution caused that explosion, but that this evolution was all hidden!

Scientists admit that there is overwhelming evidence in the fossil record that animals evolved much earlier than the theory of evolution suggests.

Note: This does not refer to deep time; it refers to the order in which fossils are found. End note.

Scientists admit that whenever you see a time in geologic literature, you should demand uncertainty.

Scientists claim that we already know that life evolved from a common ancestor, so they automatically reject findings that don't agree with that conclusion.

Scientists admit there is no tree of phylogenetic life pointing to a common ancestor. Genes do not give information about evolutionary relationships.

Molecular and anatomical data frequently disagree, leaving scientists arguing about how to classify them.

We are aware of numerous instances where similarity does not necessarily indicate common ancestry. Evolutionists repeatedly invoke convergent evolution to uphold their theory from collapse, while convergent evolution goes against all of their homology arguments. The whole phylogenetic tree is based on similarity being a reliable indicator of ancestry, and as we see, they don't have this anymore.

There's no consistent, coherent way to organize all animals into a family tree.

Imagine that you're invited to a reunion of distant family. You get there and you're supposed to organize yourselves into first cousins, second cousins, etc., based on appearance and common ancestry stories. But the more you talk to the people at the event, the more you realize you **don't have the same story, and not many people there look like you at all**. This is what we have with the animal classification and the phylogenetic tree of life. (The analogy breaks down when you consider that all humans were from a common human ancestor, but all living things were not.)

Punctuated equilibrium theory is a way to try to confront the stasis in the fossil record, in other words the lack of transitional fossils which Darwin's gradualistic theory requires. Punctuated equilibrium is about long periods of nothing happening, and then lots of things happening, and then back to long periods of nothing. (The only reason they have long periods of nothing is to account for traditional evolution time.) Gould was very popular for advocating this.

Meyer debunks the concepts of allopatric speciation and punctuated equilibrium. These theories require unusual speed and flexibility.

Mendel demonstrates that Darwin's concept of blended inheritance is incorrect. The discoveries of Mendel posed significant challenges to Darwin's theory.



Mutation is an editor, not a composer.

The probability of producing a new gene or protein is astronomically small. With the amount of time they are giving us, it's not even close to enough time to make this a possibility. Even with billions of years, if you took a single phrase and mixed up that phrase and added random letters onto it, you couldn't get a complete library.

Richard Dawkins had a computer program recreate a phrase, but this does not really mirror natural selection because **natural selection isn't given a phrase to look for.**

Before any beneficial protein gene folding occurs through random natural selection, functional benefits would be lost.

Chapter 11 discusses a case where a scientist allowed an article questioning evolution to be peer-reviewed and published in an academic journal, only to be promptly fired for doing so.

Evolutionists make claims about genes evolving, which are **as unsupported as alchemists'** claims of turning lead into gold.

Evolutionists make claims about gene mutation very similar to taking a book, rearranging its paragraphs randomly, changing the spelling of words, reordering the page number, the page arrangement, etc., and expecting a more advanced book to be made from this random process.

Note: Remember: evolution is all about natural selection, which means that, left to themselves, things will naturally do this stuff. However, the obvious reality is the opposite – that nature disassembles, destroying everything (it's that pesky little 2nd law of thermodynamics). Only the supernatural God creates. End note.

Note: Here's a million-dollar question for 'Christian evolutionists, why do we embrace the timeline of natural selection? Surely supernatural selection could do it faster? Guided vs unguided processes? But time is the sacred cow of evolution – get rid of old Earth, and it soon becomes apparent that everything about the theory of evolution is bogus. If the evolutionists leave the party, no one will want to come anymore (or, better said, be forced to come anymore), and all this common ancestor nonsense will fall away. End note.

Evolutionary biologists use the term 'de novo' to refer to unexplainable sudden changes. (New terms don't solve problems.)

The types of mutations that do occur are not the types of mutations required by macroevolution.

There's no sufficient variation, which means there can be no sufficient selection, which means there can be no evolution of species.

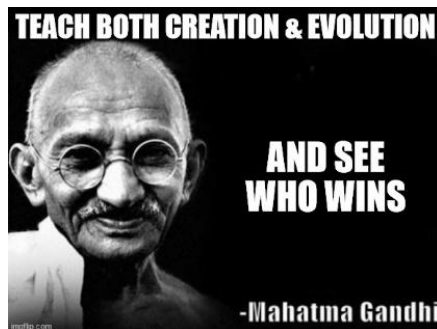
Neo-Darwinism does not account for the genetic or epigenetic origins of life. Meyer goes into detail on these subjects.

The Cambrian explosion remains a profound problem for evolution. Microevolution observed in nature only explains **survival of the fittest, not the arrival of the fittest.**

Neo-Darwinism depends on three claims.

1. That there are variations
2. That natural selection selects among those variations and
3. Those favored variations were passed on to future generations. They are variation, natural selection, and heritability. This is the triad of evolution.

Evolutionists proposed wild-eyed theories without giving any chemical or biological explanation of how those could be feasible.



(Joking)

Any self-organizing components in chemistry are extremely basic, far simpler than the complexity of DNA. Scientists admit that **self-organization is really more a slogan** than a theory.

Note: The Jurassic Park film line, "life finds a way," is just another pro-evolution slogan attempting to suggest that major things can happen naturally without supernatural direction or creation. End note.

Genes do not and cannot generate new epigenetic information.

Darwinists are in trouble when you point out that natural selection wouldn't allow for much variety, so how are you going to get all the variety? Darwinists have attempted to discuss various non-functional gene duplication theories, but remain stuck with this problem. It makes their time for random mutations much longer, once again excluding evolution as a possibility within the time frame given by modern scientists.

Scientists admit that evolution is speculative.

The whole point of natural selection theory is to explain design without a designer.

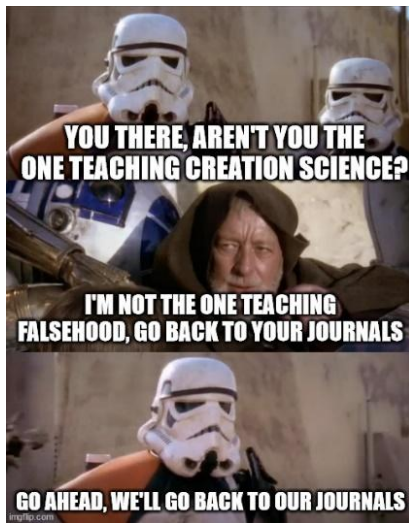
Note: Why do people who believe God used evolution accept evolutionary timetables? Those are timetables that would supposedly be required if no designer were involved. End note.

It's not just that nature doesn't look like it evolved; nature **specifically appears to have been designed**.

Computer simulators of evolution have a target sequence, but natural evolution should not have a target sequence. Natural selection lacks foresight. Generic mutation simulators require a forward-looking direction, and this is precisely what nature and natural selection lack.

Interdependent logical interactions show design (not natural selection, which is the heart of the theory of evolution).

See The Anarchist Manifesto.



The Cambrian explosion does not support the Darwinian idea of a bottom-up evolution.

Agassi, a contemporary of Darwin, pointed out that in the fossil record, we see various prototypes that indicate intelligent design. All these years later, that still appears to be the case.

The book “The Invisible Man” by GK Chesterton is about how someone was murdered while four honest guards did not detect the murder. It was the mailman who clearly walked up to the house, entered, and then walked back out - they just didn't suspect him. This is similar to how nature clearly suggests an intelligent designer - it's just that scientists are **unwilling to acknowledge** the designer.

The commitment to materialism in science causes them to reject intelligent design. It's not that materialism is what the evidence shows, it's **their only allowed framework**, even when the evidence points elsewhere (great full quote here if you can find it).

Scientists have **decided by fiat** to exclude anything involving intelligent design, and this is greatly hindering scientific progress, **limiting the types of theories that are tested**, etc.

We shouldn't be committed to abstract criteria about whether something is scientific or not. **There are disagreements about what science is. Rather, we should focus on whether something is true.**

There are unobservable phenomena, such as magnetic fields and the gravitational force, yet these are clearly scientific concepts. So, why is intelligent design, attributed to an unseen designer, not considered scientific?

Note: And yes, we can detect the impact of God, just as we can detect the impact of gravity, magnetism, and so on. End note.

Similar logic and reasoning are employed in intelligent design and Neo-Darwinism, yet they arrive at two different conclusions.

Experience shows us that things are made by cause-and-effect design, so why wouldn't nature be the same?

We have sufficient evidence to suggest that causal design made nature, although we don't have all the details of how, and this is logical.

They used to think there was junk DNA, that much of the genome was not necessary because it was supposedly mere leftovers from the trial and error of evolution's natural selection; now they are finding that **there is no junk DNA**. See the Encode Project.

Evolution's monopoly on science today stifles discussion.



Scientific materialism followed (Note: we might say 'is the fruit of') Darwinism, claiming that there is no purpose in life, and no purpose for

Earth.

Neo-Darwinism specifically denies that natural selection is guided in any way. They say the appearance of design is an **illusion**.

You can't insist that science and religion are two separate fields and simultaneously call for the harmonization of science and religion.

Note: Great point. Either they work together to make one connective truth, or one of them is wrong. End note.

"Why attempt to reconcile traditional Christian theology with Darwin's theory as Collins tries to do if the theory itself has begun to collapse?"

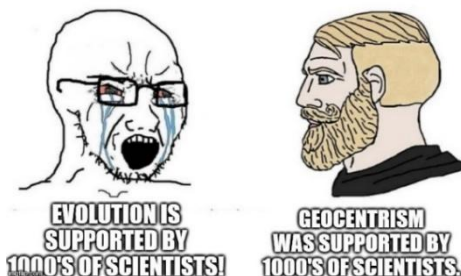
The new atheism is built upon (*or 'is the fruit of'*) Darwin's theory.

Intelligent design doesn't insist that there wasn't something before Earth.

Intelligent design suggests that life may have a purpose, implying the possibility of a god.

Intelligent design **detects and identifies** creation, it doesn't just say there's a designer. The ability to detect design brings science and faith into **real harmony**. This prevents feelings of anxiety and promotes feelings of wholeness and hope. We need landmarks and steady points of reference. We need a father to call out to for help when we are troubled.

Intelligent design has faith affirming implications.



Henry Morris Scientific Creationism Ch. 5

Uniformism or Catastrophism? (On Geologic Column Layer Issues) Highlights & Commentary

The book covers many rock formations continent-wide that aren't forming today, and must have been from catastrophic volcanism and continent-wide flooding to spread the material.

If the present is key to the past (as Hutton's uniformitarianism claims), it should be obvious that **all of the fossil life lived at the same time; today**, we have birds, mammals, reptiles, humans, and single-celled organisms, all at the same time, and **so it was for the past** animals.

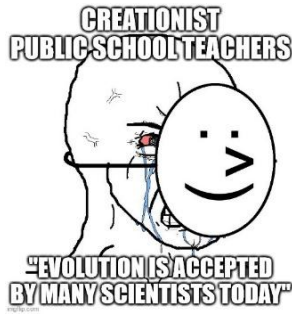
There is no worldwide unconformity, you can't determine where one age begins and the other ends; they use "para-conformities" which means no visible difference in the geologic layers but only a difference in fossils; but further analysis has shown that there is no way to tell by fossils of one age beginning and another ending. The record is continuous!

Invertebrates are at the bottom of the fossil layers because that's where they live, at the lower altitudes.

Humans have always lived separately from starfish and other types of animals, which is why their fossils aren't found together. *(Note: It wouldn't be fun to live by raptors or T-rex's either.)*

More spherical animals would settle lower because they have less drag in the flood water.

Evolutionists tried to explain away dinosaur fossil prints next to human fossil prints by saying there was some kind of dinosaur with human-shaped feet, which there is, of course, no evidence for.



Geologists are beginning to admit that geologic formations can best be explained by sudden catastrophic events. They say there is a long time between these events (punctuated equilibrium), but the only reason for claiming the long time between events is the theory of evolution!

Note: This is a great example of events being dreamed up to make someone's theory work. Like phlogiston and caloric, soon we will accept the fact that nature doesn't need the process of punctuated equilibrium, and that it doesn't exist!

PART 6: COSMIC EVOLUTION ISSUES: BIG BANG, PLANETS, PRE-BIOTIC SPECULATION



Cosmic Change at the Fall of Adam: Excerpt from Dr. Robert Wright

The following is an excerpt from Dr. Wright’s essay, “The Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil: Symbol, Shadow, and Stone” (On Both Literal and Symbolic Meanings to Eden & The Fall).

See <https://www.afloodofhope.com/post/the-tree-of-knowledge-of-good-and-evil-symbol-shadow-and-stone>

Entropy, the Curse, Thorns, and Cosmic Change

The Fall as a discrete event introduced entropy: decay, death, and disorder into the universe. This aligns with the Curse (Genesis 3:17–19): cursed ground, “thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to thee,” sweat, and return to dust. The introduction of thorns is no incidental detail. It directly stems from the transgression tied to the Tree of Knowledge. Pre-Fall, the ground yielded effortless abundance. Post-Fall, it resisted with painful, entropic growth. Thorns symbolize the new reality of opposition, toil, and mortality. We can link this to the second law of thermodynamics. The universe’s tendency toward disorder was not inherent in the pristine creation but allowed to exist by the Fall. This explains physical death, disease, and natural evil.

This is not mere symbolism but a factual shift in cosmic conditions. It enables opposition (2 Nephi 2:11) while necessitating redemption.

The Tree's fruit was the gateway to original sin's transmission (Romans 5:12). The event was necessary for agency, family, and exaltation, yet still required Christ's intervention. The claim to moral autonomy produced real consequences that only the second Adam could reverse. The thorns of the curse become a profound link to the Atonement. At Christ's crucifixion, soldiers wove a crown of thorns and placed it on his head (Matthew 27:29; Mark 15:17; John 19:2, 5). The second Adam, hanging on a tree (the cross; see Acts 5:30; Galatians 3:13; Deuteronomy 21:23), literally bore upon his brow the very thorns that the first Adam's act had introduced into the world. This crown was not random mockery but a typological fulfillment. Christ, who knew no sin, wore the emblem of the Fall's curse to redeem it. The tree that brought knowledge through the assertion of autonomy produced thorns. The tree (cross) of obedience bore the King crowned with those thorns, reversing the curse and bearing its full weight. In this way, the historical reality of the Tree of Knowledge and its immediate consequences (thorns) find their prophetic shadow in the crucifixion. Stone, symbol, and shadow converge in the Savior's suffering.

Possible Scientific Basis for the Fall and the Introduction of Entropy

Some thinkers have explored possible scientific correlates to the theological reality of the Fall introducing entropy, decay, and death into the created order. The Second Law of Thermodynamics describes the universal tendency toward increasing disorder, or entropy, in isolated systems. While the fundamental laws of physics, including thermodynamics, appear to have been operative from the initial creation (evidenced by processes such as solar energy transfer and digestion), many interpreters suggest that pre-Fall conditions were supernaturally sustained in a state of remarkable order and immortality. The discrete act of partaking of the forbidden fruit may have triggered a profound physical and biological shift.

In this view, the fruit itself could have contained properties or initiated biochemical processes that fundamentally altered human physiology and, by extension, the broader creation. Possible mechanisms include the introduction of oxidative stress, free radical damage, or the activation of genetic programs for aging and cellular senescence. Such changes would align with the experiential knowledge gained: mortality and the full spectrum of opposition became embodied realities.

The transition from a paradisiacal, immortal state to mortality involved a real physical transformation. The partaking of the actual fruit enacted this change, removing the divine sustaining influence that had previously counteracted or minimized entropic effects. This is not to say the Second Law itself originated at the Fall, but that its full, unchecked consequences for living organisms and the ground (thorns, toil, death) were unleashed. The curse pronounced upon the ground and the introduction of thorns serve as tangible markers of this new entropic reality. Ultimately, these scientific reflections remain interpretive models. They illustrate how the historical stone of the Fall could produce measurable physical consequences while retaining its rich symbolic and typological power.

Ongoing Creation (On Big Bang & Cosmic Origins)

Strangely, some Christians try to claim Big Bang as a Christian idea, just like how they try to make a Christian evolution hybrid. These are silly attempts to reconcile truth with error.

The creation account is clearly understood to be about this Earth, not all Earths. This obliterates the Big Bang theory about all of the universe coming into existence at one time (and yes, there are scientific problems with redshift, relativity, and other mainstream theories). Moses also distinguishes the latter-day saints from other Christian faiths by demonstrating the knowledge that God's creation wasn't a one-time deal, and that His creations will continue forever.

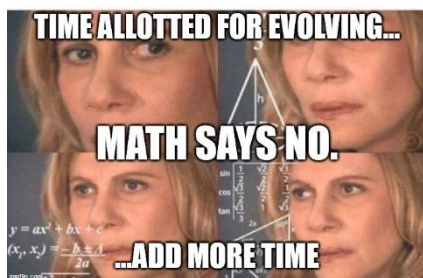
Remember **Russell M Nelson's** prophetic teachings against the Big Bang from earlier: "...some people erroneously think that these marvelous physical attributes happened by chance or resulted from a big bang somewhere. Ask yourself, "Could an explosion in a printing shop produce a dictionary?" The likelihood is *most* remote. But if so, it could never heal its own torn pages or reproduce its own newer editions!" (Russell M Nelson, Conf. Report April 2012, Thanks Be To God <https://www.churchofjesuschrist.org/study/general-conference/2012/04/thanks-be-to-god?lang=eng>)

Strangely, most Christian creationists advocate this planet as the only place humans are to be found, and we have scripture demonstrating that this is

incorrect as well (think of the D&C where Joseph teaches that multiple worlds are inhabited, for starters, and God teaching Moses of the many inhabited worlds He has made.)

Evolutionists are careful to indicate that Earth and life on it may be even older than the numbers they have provided. Those familiar with evolutionary theory know that evolutionists continually revise the age of the earth to accommodate the statistical impossibility of life's evolution within the time frame they propose.

In what are now humorous admissions, modern science has recently been talking about doubling (again) the age of the universe, bringing it up from around 14 billion years old, now to around 27 billion (here's one article for example: <https://www.earth.com/news/new-study-claims-our-universe-is-27-billion-years-old-double-the-current-age-estimate/>). This is in part because, as stated in the article, "The James Webb Space Telescope has discovered early galaxies that seem to be far too advanced for their age." In other words, when they looked at where they thought would be evidence of the 'early' and 'young' universe, they found, to their surprise, advanced galaxies. Looks like they are completely off in their calculations about the origins of the universe. When Joseph Fielding Smith published *Man: His Origin and Destiny* in the 1950s, the universe age was around 7 billion years. Someday they'll figure out that the works of God are eternal, without beginning or end.



This is one of the many times they put supposed scientific knowledge above scripture. It is shocking how quickly they dismiss scripture because of what they think they know from science. Clearly their priorities are first science, second scripture. Clearly this is not how God intended our education to be conducted.

Science is, in fact, beginning to catch up with scripture; scientists are showing that our dating methods are unreliable and based on faulty premises, such as

the notion that the earth began as a melted rock, whereas scripture states that it began primarily as water (**JST 2 Peter 3:5-7; Gen. 1:1-10**). Radiometric dating simply doesn't work for a water world, it only works for a clock ticking back to when rock was last melted. Creation rock never melted at all. For the best treatment of the water creation, refer to Universal Model Vol. 1, chapters 5 & 7, and read Evolution Cruncher. We forget that 200 years ago, the scientific community understood a young water-based Earth, and only upon false premises did they build the case for an old magma-based Earth. In short, modern science has no clear understanding of how the Creation occurred.

Did The Big Bang Actually Happen? (No) By Dr. Robert Wright

<https://www.afloodofhope.com/post/did-the-big-bang-actually-happen>

A recent article, “**Scientist Disputes That Big Bang Actually Happened**” (**Futurism, September 17, 2024**), reports on computer scientist Lior Shamir of Kansas State University, who has revived the nearly century-old “tired light” theory originally proposed by Fritz Zwicky in 1929. Shamir argues that the observed **redshift** of distant galaxies—long taken as proof that the universe is expanding from a Big Bang 13.8 billion years ago—is instead caused by photons simply losing energy as they travel through space. He points to James Webb Space Telescope (JWST) images showing “large and mature galaxies” that appear far too developed for the early universe predicted by the Big Bang model. **“If the Big Bang happened as scientists initially believed,” Shamir states, “these galaxies are older than the universe itself.”** By analyzing how redshift varies with distance (accounting for Earth’s rotation), he claims the data better fit a static universe in which light tires over distance rather than space itself expanding.

From a strictly Biblical perspective, this article is a powerful illustration of the futility of human reasoning when it rejects the absolute truth God has already revealed. Scripture declares that the heavens were not the product of an explosion or gradual expansion but were deliberately **stretched out** by the Creator Himself. Multiple passages use the same Hebrew verb (*natah*) to describe this divine act:

- “Thus says God the LORD, who created the heavens and **stretched them out...**” (Isaiah 42:5)
- “I, even I, have made the earth... My hands have **stretched out** the heavens” (Isaiah 45:12)

- “The LORD... who **stretched out** the heavens” (Zechariah 12:1)
- “Who **stretches out** the heavens like a curtain” (Psalm 104:2)
- “He has made the earth by His power... and has **stretched out** the heavens at His discretion” (Jeremiah 10:12)

These are **not poetic metaphors for slow cosmic inflation** over billions of years. They describe a **sovereign, instantaneous** creative act during the six-day creation week (Genesis 1). When God **stretched the heavens, the light already in transit from distant stars and galaxies was stretched along with space**. That stretching is precisely what **produces the redshift** we observe today—**without requiring either an expanding universe** or “tired” photons losing energy en route.

The article testifies to the confusion that reigns when scientists refuse God’s eyewitness account. Shamir’s “tired light” proposal joins a long line of alternatives (steady-state cosmology, plasma cosmology, variable speed of light theories, etc.) because the Big Bang model itself keeps running into fatal contradictions—most recently **the “impossibly mature” galaxies revealed by JWST**. The piece itself notes that astronomers have repeatedly rejected tired light because it would blur distant images (which we do not observe) and because it cannot account for the cosmic microwave background. Yet the very fact that secular researchers are now seriously debating whether the Big Bang “actually happened” proves the point of Romans 1:21–22: “Although they knew God, they did not glorify Him as God, nor were thankful, but became futile in their thoughts, and their foolish hearts were darkened. Professing to be wise, they **became fools**.”

God didn't have to tell us how He created, yet in loving condescension He did—both in Genesis and through the prophets. He could have left us guessing. Instead, the Bible gives us the only absolute truth about origins: “By the word of the LORD the heavens were made, and all the host of them by the breath of His mouth” (Psalm 33:6). Fallen humanity, however—its mind darkened by the Fall (Ephesians 4:18), its body subject to decay (Romans 8:20–21), and its world cursed by the Fall—prefers to lean on its own crippled intellect rather than bow before the Creator’s clear revelation. The result is endless contention, shifting models, and “crises in cosmology” that never end because they start from the wrong foundation.

This article is a timely witness of why we must begin with God’s Word, not man’s speculation. Just as the global Flood of Noah’s day left unmistakable geological evidence that secular geology still cannot explain without invoking millions of imaginary years, the stretching of the heavens left unmistakable redshift evidence that secular cosmology cannot explain without invoking

billions of imaginary years. Both the rocks beneath our feet and the stars above our heads declare the same truth: the God who judged the world with water in Genesis 6–9 is the same God who spoke the heavens into existence and stretched them out in Genesis 1. He has not left us without a witness.

When we stand on the firm foundation of Scripture, the “crisis” disappears. The redshift is not a puzzle demanding 13.8 billion years or exotic new physics; it is the visible signature of the Creator’s mighty arm that stretched the heavens like a curtain in six literal days. That same Creator preserved Noah and his family through the Flood, and that same Creator has given us His unchanging Word so that we might know Him, trust Him, and proclaim His glory to a world still futile in its darkened thinking.

We hope that visitors to The Flood Museum leave not only convinced of the historical reality of Noah’s Flood, but also of the historical reality of the Six-Day Creation and the stretched heavens—truths that no telescope, no computer model, and no “tired light” theory can ever overturn. “The heavens declare the glory of God” (Psalm 19:1)—and they declare it exactly as He said they would.

The Illusion of Accelerating Expansion by Dr. Robert Wright

<https://www.afloodofhope.com/post/the-illusion-of-accelerating-expansion>

The Standard Evidences for Accelerating Expansion Lose Their Force

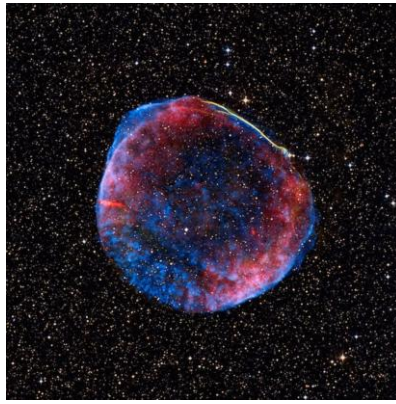
Scripture repeatedly declares that God “stretched out the heavens.” This divine act, far from poetic language, provides the precise mechanism that explains the redshift observed in distant starlight, the apparent great age of the universe, and the remarkable uniformity of the cosmic microwave background, while confirming that our cosmos is in fact young, consistent with the biblical timeline of approximately 6,000 years since Creation. Far from standing alone, this stretching integrates seamlessly with the biblical account of the “hammered-out” firmament (*raqia*) formed on Day 2 from the primordial Deep, offering a cohesive young-earth cosmology that aligns with both ancient revelation and modern observations, including recent James Webb Space Telescope discoveries and emerging evidence of cosmological non-uniformity.

The Holy Spirit, speaking through the prophets, uses the Hebrew word *natah* (“to stretch out, spread out, extend like a curtain or tent”) no fewer than eleven times to describe God’s creative work. Isaiah 40:22 declares that He “stretches out the heavens like a curtain, and spreads them out like a tent to dwell in.” Isaiah 44:24 affirms, “I am the LORD, who makes all things, who stretches out the heavens all alone.” Jeremiah 10:12 adds that He stretches out the heavens by His understanding. This stretching occurred during Creation Week, climaxing on Day 4 when the sun, moon, and stars were placed in the firmament (Genesis 1:14-19). It was a supernatural, rapid expansion of space itself, exactly as modern observations of redshift appear to record. When God hammered out the *raqia* on Day 2 (Genesis 1:6-8; Job 37:18) and then stretched the heavens, the fabric of space thinned and expanded, lengthening the wavelengths of light traveling through it. The result is the cosmological redshift we measure today. That single, finished act accounts for the data without requiring ongoing expansion, dark energy, or billions of years.

Secular cosmology interprets the same data through the lens of the Friedmann-Lemaître-Robertson-Walker metric and a 13.8-billion-year expanding universe. Within that framework, several observations are claimed to demonstrate that the expansion is not only continuing but accelerating. Each of these claims, however, rests on assumptions that the biblical account of a completed stretch does not share. When those assumptions are set aside, the evidence for acceleration dissolves, and the observations become consistent with the young, stretched cosmos described in Scripture.

Type Ia Supernovae

Distant Type Ia supernovae appear fainter than expected in a purely matter-dominated, decelerating model. Secular researchers concluded that the expansion must therefore be accelerating under the influence of a mysterious dark energy (Riess et al. 1998; Perlmutter et al. 1999).



From the perspective of the stretched heavens, this conclusion is an artifact of the wrong historical model. Type Ia supernovae are standardized by assuming a cosmology and a time-dilation factor that themselves presuppose continuous expansion over deep time. When those assumptions are removed, or when corrections for progenitor age and host-galaxy properties are properly applied, the apparent need for acceleration weakens or disappears (Son et al. 2025; Sah, Rameez & Sarkar 2026). Distant supernovae occur in environments whose stellar populations differ systematically from nearby ones; younger stellar populations can produce intrinsically fainter events. The dimming is therefore not evidence that space is accelerating today, but a signature of the different conditions created when God stretched the heavens and placed mature stellar systems into the newly expanded firmament.

The James Webb Space Telescope has compounded the difficulty for the deep-time interpretation by revealing massive, chemically enriched, and even quiescent galaxies at redshifts once thought to represent only a few hundred million years after a Big Bang. Such mature structures fit a Creation Week in which God organized complete worlds on Day 4, not a slow evolutionary buildup. The light we receive carries the imprint of the stretch itself; the supernovae are simply part of the finished creation whose light has been lengthened by the *natah* of the heavens. Even within the secular literature the debate continues, with some analyses affirming that the acceleration signal remains robust after recalibration (Wiseman et al. 2026) while others find that proper age corrections reverse the inference of isotropic acceleration. The biblical framework removes the necessity for either side of that debate by locating the redshift in a completed divine act rather than ongoing cosmic dynamics.

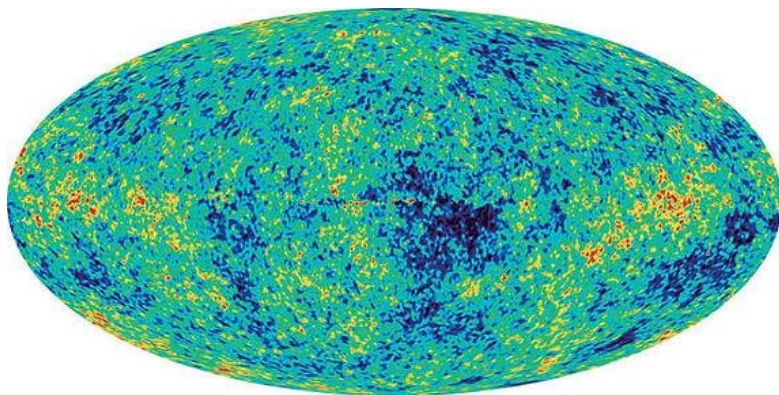
Baryon Acoustic Oscillations

Secular cosmology treats a preferred scale in the clustering of galaxies as the fossil imprint of sound waves that traveled through a hot plasma in the early universe. Measuring that scale at different redshifts is said to map the expansion history and to require dark energy for consistency (DESI Collaboration 2024, 2025).

This interpretation begins by assuming the very history it claims to prove. The biblical account offers a different origin for large-scale structure. On Day 4 God placed the stars and organized the galaxies within the stretched firmament. The preferred clustering scale is simply part of the ordered arrangement He established. There is no need for an early plasma phase, acoustic oscillations, or a subsequent dark-energy-driven acceleration. Once the completed stretch is recognized as the source of redshift, the baryon acoustic oscillation “ruler” ceases to demand ongoing acceleration; it becomes another feature of the mature cosmos God stretched into place.

Cosmic Microwave Background Combined with Low-Redshift Data

The near-perfect blackbody spectrum and tiny temperature fluctuations of the cosmic microwave background, when combined with supernova or baryon acoustic oscillation measurements, are claimed to require a flat universe dominated by dark energy.



Scripture supplies a more direct explanation. The uniformity of the microwave background arises from the orderly, divine scattering of primordial material from the Deep as God hammered out the *raqia* and stretched the heavens. Density fluctuations were imprinted by the same creative act that organized the stars, not by quantum seeds stretched during a hypothetical inflationary epoch. Known anomalies in the large-scale pattern of the background already sit uncomfortably with the simplest inflationary picture. Combining the microwave background with low-redshift probes only appears to confirm dark

energy inside the circular framework that already assumes continuous expansion over billions of years. A rapid, finished stretch, possibly accompanied by a declining speed of light in the early creation, accounts for the observed background without deep time or acceleration.

Growth of Large-Scale Structure, Weak Lensing, and Galaxy Clusters

These probes examine how rapidly structure has grown under gravity and are said to require accelerated expansion to suppress growth in the manner observed.

Again the conclusion depends on the assumed expansion history. In a universe that was stretched to its present size during Creation Week, galaxies and clusters were created mature and already distributed according to God's design. There is no multi-billion-year growth history to measure. Apparent suppression of growth is simply the observation of the finished creation. Weak-lensing signals and cluster abundances therefore do not independently establish acceleration; they are consistent with a cosmos whose large-scale architecture was established in a single divine week and then stretched into the expanse we observe.

Dynamical Tests such as the Integrated Sachs-Wolfe Effect

Cross-correlations between the microwave background and large-scale structure are interpreted as evidence that gravitational potentials are decaying because the expansion is accelerating.

These signals are subtle and highly sensitive to the assumed cosmological model. In a finished stretch the large-scale gravitational potentials remain essentially static on the scales we observe today. The correlations lose their necessity as evidence for dark energy once the continuous-expansion assumption is removed. They become consistent with the stable, ordered heavens God stretched out by His understanding.

The Completed Work of the Creator

All of the listed evidences for accelerating expansion rest upon the same interpretive scaffold: the universe is described by an evolving spacetime that requires dark energy to fit the data. The biblical language of God stretching out the heavens supplies a different scaffold, a rapid, finished, supernatural expansion of the fabric of space during Creation Week. That single act

produces the observed redshift, the reach of light from distant objects, the uniformity of the microwave background, and the mature structures revealed by the James Webb Space Telescope, all within the biblical timeline affirmed in Doctrine and Covenants 77:6-7 and the prophetic records of Moses and Abraham.

Dark energy then becomes an unnecessary mathematical patch required only because the wrong history was assumed. Recent tensions in the data, the Hubble tension, unexpectedly mature high-redshift galaxies, possible supernova systematics, and mild preferences for evolving rather than constant dark energy, already show the standard model under strain. The stretching of the heavens removes the need for the patch altogether.

As you look up at the night sky, the redshift you see is not proof of billions of years; it is the lingering echo of the moment the Creator hammered out the firmament, stretched out the heavens by His understanding, and scattered and organized the cosmos in a single week. The same Lord who stretched the heavens is the true Light of the world, offering salvation today through Jesus Christ. The Bible was right all along. The universe is young. The firmament stands as a hammered and stretched testament to divine power. And God's Word endures forever as trustworthy history from the Flood to the farthest galaxies.

References

DESI Collaboration. 2024. "DESI 2024 III: Baryon Acoustic Oscillations from Galaxies and Quasars." *Journal of Cosmology and Astroparticle Physics* 2025(04): 012. arXiv:2404.03000.

DESI Collaboration. 2025. "DESI 2024 VI: Cosmological Constraints from the Measurements of Baryon Acoustic Oscillations." *Journal of Cosmology and Astroparticle Physics*.

Perlmutter, S., et al. 1999. "Measurements of Ω and Λ from 42 High-Redshift Supernovae." *Astrophysical Journal* 517: 565–586.

Riess, A. G., et al. 1998. "Observational Evidence from Supernovae for an Accelerating Universe and a Cosmological Constant." *Astronomical Journal* 116: 1009–1038.

Sah, A., M. Rameez, and S. Sarkar. 2026. "Pantheon+ Supernovae Corrected for Progenitor Age Indicate the Universe Is Decelerating." *Monthly Notices of the Royal Astronomical Society* 549: stag844.

Scolnic, D., et al. 2022. “The Pantheon+ Analysis: The Full Data Set and Light-Curve Release.” *Astrophysical Journal* 938: 113. arXiv:2112.03863.

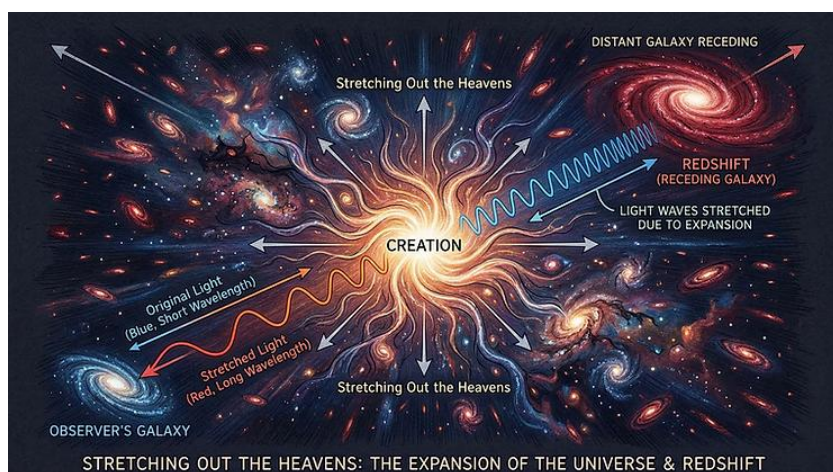
Son, J., Y.-W. Lee, C. Chung, S. Park, and H. Cho. 2025. “Strong Progenitor Age-Bias in Supernova Cosmology. II. Alignment with DESI BAO and Signs of a Non-Accelerating Universe.” *Monthly Notices of the Royal Astronomical Society*. arXiv:2510.13121.

Wiseman, P., et al. 2026. “Still Accelerating: Type Ia Supernova Cosmology Is Robust to Host Galaxy Age Evolution.” *Monthly Notices of the Royal Astronomical Society* 549: stag797.

God “Stretched Out the Heavens” (Biblical Truth Resolves Redshift, Declining Light Speed, & Apparent Age of Universe) by Dr. Robert Wright

<https://www.afloodofhope.com/post/god-stretched-out-the-heavens>

(Dr. Robert Wright: Dr. Bob, a Latter-day Saint creation advocate, was a Nuclear Engineer on submarines in the US Navy. He received his Master's Degree in Theology and his Ph.D. in Biblical Studies. His area of study was the synthesis of faith and science, using the Biblical Flood as a model. He is the author of numerous books including *A Flood of Hope: It's OK to Believe* and *Satan's War with God*. With his wife Carol, he is the founder of The Learning Institute Foundation and The Flood Museum. See his website AFloodOfHope.com.)



In the days immediately following the global Flood and the Dispersion at Babel, God sovereignly guided the nations. He raised up mighty figures like Nimrod (Sargon the Great), prepared Moses (Senenmut) in Pharaoh’s court, and judged Egypt under Amenhotep II—the very Pharaoh of the Exodus. The same authoritative historical record—the Bible—also reveals how the Creator formed the cosmos itself. Scripture repeatedly declares that God “stretched out the heavens.” This divine act, far from poetic language, provides the precise mechanism that explains the redshift observed in distant starlight and the apparent great age of the universe, while confirming that our cosmos is in fact young—consistent with the biblical timeline of approximately 6,000 years since Creation.

The Biblical Declaration

The Holy Spirit, speaking through the prophets, uses the Hebrew word *natah* (“to stretch out, spread out, extend like a curtain or tent”) no fewer than eleven times to describe God’s creative work:

- “He stretches out the heavens like a curtain, and spreads them out like a tent to dwell in.” (Isaiah 40:22)
- “I, the LORD, am the maker of all things, who stretches out the heavens by Myself...” (Isaiah 44:24)
- “It is I who made the earth and created man upon it... stretching out the heavens by Myself.” (Isaiah 45:12)

- “He has made the earth by His power... and stretched out the heavens by His understanding.” (Jeremiah 10:12)
- “The LORD... who stretches out the heavens and lays the foundation of the earth...” (Zechariah 12:1)
- “Who alone stretches out the heavens...” (Job 9:8)
- “You stretch out the heavens like a tent.” (Psalm 104:2)

This stretching occurred during Creation Week, climaxing on Day 4 when the sun, moon, and stars were placed in the firmament (Genesis 1:14-19). It was a supernatural, rapid expansion of space itself—exactly as modern observations of redshift appear to record.

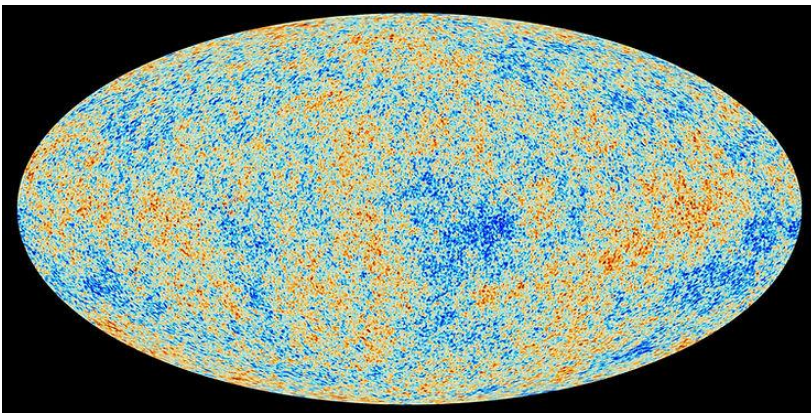


Artistic depiction of the Creator stretching out the heavens over the earth—precisely as Scripture describes in multiple passages.

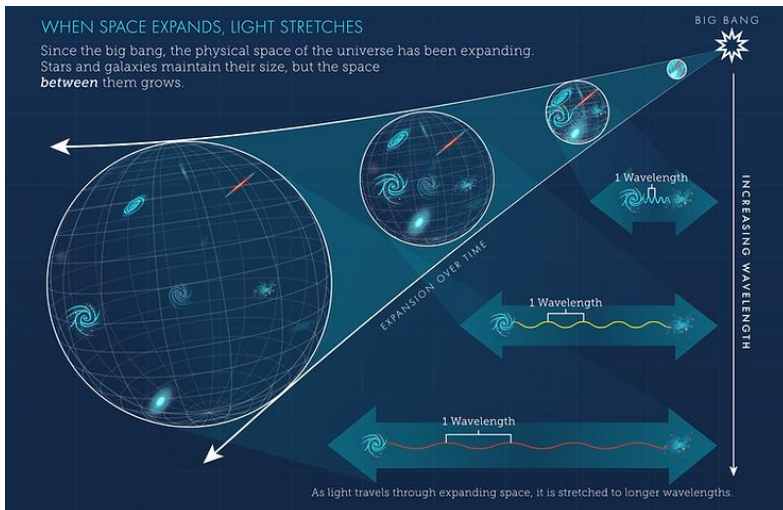
The Scientific Challenge: Redshift and Apparent Age

Astronomers observe that light from distant galaxies is redshifted—the wavelengths stretched toward the red end of the spectrum. In the standard secular model, this is interpreted as space itself expanding over 13.8 billion years, carrying galaxies apart. Combined with assumptions about constant physical laws, this leads to the conclusion of a very old universe. Distant starlight reaching Earth in only thousands of years appears impossible.

Additionally, the cosmic microwave background (CMB) radiation shows remarkable uniformity across the entire sky—regions that, under standard assumptions, could never have been in causal contact because light could not have traveled between them in the available time.



The cosmic microwave background reveals striking uniformity across vast distances—the famous “horizon problem” in secular cosmology.



NASA diagram illustrating how expansion of space stretches light wavelengths, producing the observed cosmological redshift.

The Biblical Solution: Rapid Stretching + Declining Speed of Light

The Bible’s account provides the elegant resolution. When God “stretched out the heavens” during Creation Week, space itself expanded rapidly and supernaturally. This stretching directly causes cosmological redshift: light wavelengths are lengthened as space expands, just as secular astronomers

observe—yet the entire process occurred in real time during a single day from Earth’s perspective.

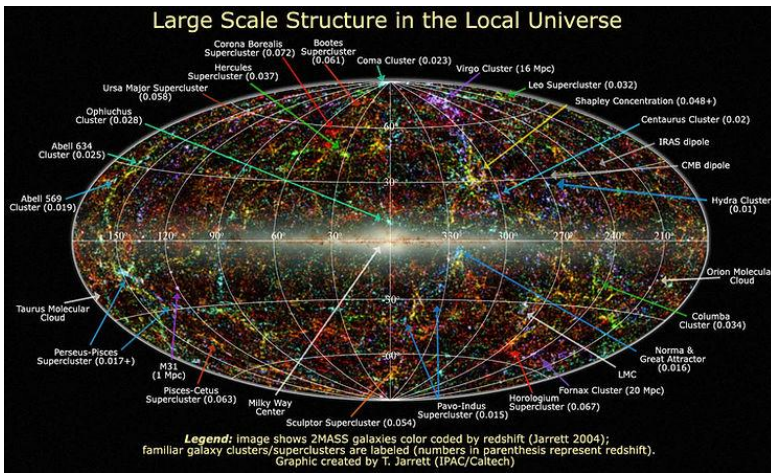
At the moment of creation, the speed of light (c) was effectively near-infinite or vastly higher than today. As God stretched the fabric of space, physical conditions changed, causing c to decline dramatically and settle at its present value. This is not arbitrary; it aligns with the observed historical trend in early measurements of light speed (documented by Barry Setterfield and others across 300+ years of data). The rapid early expansion allowed light from the farthest reaches of the cosmos to reach Earth almost instantly, solving the “starlight problem” without requiring billions of years.

Confirmation Within Academia: Questions Answered by Scripture

Even secular researchers have recognized that the standard Big Bang model faces serious difficulties. The horizon problem, flatness problem, and the need for “inflation” (an ad-hoc rapid early expansion) all arise because light speed and physical laws are assumed constant. In 1998, physicists João Magueijo and Andreas Albrecht published a groundbreaking paper proposing a **varying speed of light (VSL)** in the early universe—precisely to solve these same cosmological puzzles without inflation. Their model showed that if c was much higher early on, causal contact across the universe becomes possible, the horizon problem vanishes, and the observed uniformity of the CMB is explained naturally.

Subsequent academic work has continued exploring VSL theories, acknowledging that a changing speed of light could resolve fine-tuning issues, explain the apparent acceleration of the universe, and even address anomalies like unexpectedly mature galaxies observed at high redshifts by the James Webb Space Telescope (JWST). These “impossibly early” galaxies challenge the billions-of-years timeline—yet fit perfectly if space was stretched rapidly and light traveled far faster in the beginning.

The very questions secular cosmologists raise—“How did distant regions achieve thermal equilibrium so quickly?” and “Why does the universe appear fine-tuned for life?”—are directly answered by accepting the Bible’s authoritative statement: God supernaturally stretched out the heavens, altering physical constants in the process.



Large-scale structure of the observable universe, color-coded by redshift—showing the vast expansion Scripture attributes to God’s creative act.

Historical Context and Profound Implications

After the Flood and Babel, humanity spread across a young earth. The same sovereign God who judged the world with water and scattered the nations at Babel also stretched out the heavens in the beginning. The decline in the speed of light and the resulting redshift are not evidence of an ancient cosmos—they are the visible signature of the Creator’s mighty work completed in days.

This truth stands as yet another powerful confirmation that the Bible is accurate history from the very first verse. Skeptics who insist on an old universe must now confront not only the historical and archaeological evidence but also the cosmos itself. The very problems vexing modern cosmology—horizon uniformity, redshift interpretation, rapid galaxy formation—are elegantly resolved when we accept God’s Word as the final authority.

At the Flood Museum, this exhibit reinforces our central message: the same God who preserved Noah through the Flood, delivered Israel through the Red Sea, and stretched out the starry heavens is the same Lord who offers salvation today through Jesus Christ—the true Light of the world.

As you look up at the night sky, the redshift you see is not proof of billions of years—it is the lingering echo of the moment the Creator stretched out the heavens by His understanding. The Bible was right all along. The universe is

young. Light speed has declined. And God's Word stands forever as trustworthy history—from the Flood to the farthest galaxies.

Highlights & Commentary on Is Genesis History?: Astronomy Section

See Danny Faulkner, PhD, astronomer.

Eclipses are spectacular and rare; these are part of a design for signs, as the scriptures say.

Scripture said, "Let the earth bring forth plants;" the "bring forth" suggests that it could have been rapid creation. It may have appeared like a time lapse taking place in regular time. This could be why we see light from distant galaxies. (The idea that light has traveled billions of light-years from distant galaxies to reach us is a fabrication to hold up their theory of deep time.)

If spiral galaxies were so old, why would they still appear spiral? They would have come together.

Note: Scripture says God 'stretched out the heavens.' This could impact light travel, distances of things in space, etc. End note.

The Big Bang Theory is far from universal acceptance by scientists. Some claim Big Bang can be compatible with the Bible, but those are people who attempt to wed Genesis with our current paradigm. We should interpret the world in terms of Genesis, not the other way around.

Note: In my experience, I've heard the evolutionary biologists terrifyingly claim that they seek to reconcile religious FAITH with scientific FACT! This, of course, is typical of all Christian evolutionists and thinking in general these days - religion gets the back seat on the bus. End note.

Story of Everything: Documentary by Steven Meyer, On Apparent Meaning in Nature – Highlights & Commentary

This movie Based on book return of the god hypothesis by Stephen Meyer.

My notes here do not represent the views of Steven Meyer or the documentary, but are some highlights in my words of ideas I found interesting with added commentary, shared for educational purposes.

I'm not on board with all his ideas, but it's still a great production, and will build faith, showing that nature cannot exist without God. Even if you want to go with Big Bang theory, that still requires God.

First, here's a generated quick overview of each of the 4 chapters of the presentation:

- **Chapter 1: The Beginning of the Universe**
This section focuses on cosmology, detailing how the Big Bang theory and an expanding universe provide scientific evidence that time and the cosmos had a definite beginning.
- **Chapter 2: The Fine-Tuning of the Universe**
This chapter examines the physical constants and laws of nature, explaining how they are calibrated with extreme precision to make life possible.
- **Chapter 3: The Complexity of Life**
Exploring molecular biology, this section delves into the digital code found within DNA and the exquisite nanotechnology inside living cells, arguing that such complex, functional information points to intelligent design.
- **Chapter 4: Beauty in Nature**
The final chapter explores the gratuitous, vast beauty found throughout the natural world, arguing that the presence of aesthetic beauty in animals and organisms reflects the artistry of a Creator.

Now for a deeper dive and some commentary:

Ch. 1 The Beginning

Materialism is assumed as a fact, nothing beyond material world.

Carl Sagan says universal always exists, nothing for the creator to do.

Slipher sees redshift, nebula moving away from us.

All galaxies shifting away red. Moving outward.

One can theorize that rewind it back, and you get beginning of universe.

Einstein suggests bending space.

*Note: There's nothing to bend. I'm not a big fan of the idea of bending space.
End note.*

If only gravity, all would combine. There must be anti gravity making empty space. Einstein puts this in, calls it a cosmological constant, an outward pushing force. Einstein chose an arbitrary force opposite of gravity to say it's a static universe, not expanding or shrinking.

George Lemaitre draws upon red shift and makes big bang theory.

Einstein didn't like big bang, he wanted a static universe. Later he acknowledged that universe isn't static. He says his scientific constant was the greatest blunder of his career.

Fred Hoyle, secular atheist, didn't like big bang, he makes steady state model, that there's always been space and time, infinitely old, and makes matter continuously. Hoyle predicted no matter how far back you look it'll look the same.

Note: Didn't James Webb telescope show far out galaxies don't appear young? This is no help for Big Bang. Big Bang has tons of problems with it, it's rather disappointing to see it supported in this presentation. I suppose they are saying even if you want to go with Big Bang, even that needs God. Not the strongest argument in my opinion. End note.

Penzios and Wilson say they found big bang leftover radiation.

Stephen Hawking comes up with singularity. Back in time with space very condensed and curved into 1 spot. Beginning of universe.

Would suggest a time without time or space matter. The singularity would be outside space and time.

If universe is finite, we must ask where it came from, what caused it. Something independent of matter, space, and time. Non physical. Immaterial.

William Sandage. Says it must be a supernatural event.

Robert Jastrow. Book God and the astronomers.

Note: Just because expanding galaxies doesn't mean big bang. End note.

Note: Many take a deist approach, that God did initial hang then nothing. But God can move around things as he wishes, as he judges justly. The way I see it, God and his angels are constantly involved in our lives. Christian evolutionists should pause and consider the power of God to move faster and more effectively than supposed natural selection and its deep time. With these theological reasonings in place, they can better detect where 'the science' may be off, as it often is. God wants to help us find truth. Also be aware that the Devil wants to keep us from it. Nothing is neutral, not even blessed science. End note.

Note: Red shift could be this local garden. Who knows what goes on beyond. End note.

See John Lennox

Hawking said because there are laws like gravity, the universe can and will create itself from nothing . From some math. That math makes space time and energy. But there's no universe to describe. Math has no causal power.

Meyer says Math exists in a mind. So if math made the universe, that's to say the universe is from a mind.

Ch 2. Fine-tuned Universe for Life

Fred Hoyle, says make elements in bellies of stars

Bijan Keating

Be 6 and He 2 together to make carbon 8, but this would make a high energy carbon.

Hoyle says this will start at high energy and settle down to normal energy

Note: Speculative of earlier higher energy carbon. End note.

Ward whaling. Does something and gets a carbon energy excited state like Hoyle predicted. Seemed to support Hoyle's idea on how elements form

Universe is Goldilocks just right.

Hoyle admitted life must be a consequence of the fine tuning of the universe.

Hoyle's fine tuning parameters are what convinced him a super intellect created the universe to make life possible.

Do robbers guess the code of the vault, or is it an inside job with someone who already knew?

Without guidance you would expect a universe without life. Fine tuning implies a fine tuner.

Big bang isn't order from chaos. It's a start of order.

Note: Big Bang advocates say it came from nothing, they are insistent on that point. I don't see much value in trying to Christianize this theory, inherently designed as a godless explanation for the creation. End note.

We observe that entropy increases. You don't stir coffee and milk and separate them, they join.

If universe is orderly now, must have been more orderly in beginning.

The initial disorder would be so small it would be nearly perfect

Newton epilogue to principia on universal gravitation. He says this beautiful system of sun and planets could only come from council and dominion of an intelligent being.

Moon recirculated oceans via tides to get oxygen deeper.

Magnetic shield from magma core

Note: Something causes it, miraculous to be sure. End note.

Other planets protect earth life

Timothy McGrew

They say multiverse is how to explain how our universe is the lucky one allowing complex life. Indeed, the fine tuned universe does require explanation beyond our universe. Anything outside our universe is supernatural. We point to supernatural to avoid supernatural. Is there a universe generating machine? String theory and inflation cosmology, they all require fine tuning.

Monkey on type writer given time maybe type hamlet? Actually he doesn't even have all the right keys on the keyboard.

Multiverse just pushes the problem back without solving it. Finely tuned anything is intentional. Intelligent design is the best explanation for it.

Life as Simulation theory is crazy, no evidence, nothing to do with science. This is to say you can't trust what you see. Same as multi verse. Not serious.

Chapter 3: The Complexity of Life

Michael Behe. 30 parts needed for flagellar motor. 100rpm and can change direction in a quarter turn.

ATP synthase. Turbine generating energy.

Turbines. Rotary engines. Etc.

Darwin knew nothing of complex micro machines. He said he there's something you can't explain by slight modifications, my theory completely breaks down. So it is with these machines. Evolutionary precursors wouldn't work.

Parts put together are product of a mind.

Things look designed because they were designed.

Watson crick DNA, learned how genes replicate, by strands pairing and this being able to split and duplicate.

But what's more they see genetics are a language. Like a digital bit string.

Douglas Axe

Precise shapes from even more fine tuning. DNA has info, directs construction of protein.

Cell isn't a blob, it's sophisticated processing unit.

Note: Some say Behe isn't a scientist. He is. PhD, research, using scientific method, etc. Wiser evolutionists admit that he is a scientist, and try to disagree with his findings. End note.

Kenyon sees DNA isn't a crystal lattice of simple binding.

Magnetism explains letters on a fridge, but their arrangement is from intelligence. Arrangement of characters isn't explained by the forces.

Molecules don't evolve toward life.

Probiotic to biotic must involve intelligence.

Specificity. Specified complexity. Beyond complexity of many parts, it's their arrangement to make them do the special task. DNA is this way. DNA codes for some, so it has meaning.

New information is associated with rational intelligence. On all levels. Not spontaneous.

Bill gates says DNA is like software but much more complex than any we have made. And software is designed.

William Dembski author the design revolution

Informative needs to be read and converted into what's needed to accomplish needed work

Richard Gunasekara

The cell machinery proofreads and edits.

Design logic in the cell is like but is beyond anything we have produced.

Protein can even be read 2 ways to do 2 different things. We can't code like that.

Ch. 4 The Story of Everything

Earth isn't just minimalistic for survival. It's extravagant and beautiful.

Note: Love isn't just about survival. Neither is beauty. End note.

The universe appears to be designed so it begs the question of design.

The beauty principle - true theories often. Convey beauty. Crick said of the DNA, it's so beautiful it's got to be right.

Note: Zion is beautiful. Less than Zion is less truth. Less than our best. End note.

The story of everything is purpose. An author behind everything.

Dawkins claims there are no signs of intelligence in the universe. But there are many of those signs.

Surprisingly, **science revealed to us that there is supernatural**. A creator. The universe doesn't look like it's been left to itself. Fingerprints of its creator everywhere.

See <https://www.thestoryofeverything.film/downloads-hidden> for free PDFs related to this presentation.

Note: God is the author, not the other way around. End note.

Note: Many were involved in making this film it had to be a multi-million dollar production. Overall great stuff, though I'm not a fan of the Big Bang segment in the beginning chapter. End note.

Note: See John Lennox vs Dawkins debates. Though I don't endorse all of Lennox's views as he unnecessarily accommodates an old Earth, etc. End note.

Darwin on Trial by Phillip Johnson: Ch. 8 Pre-biological Evolution – Highlights & Commentary

Pre-biological evolution refers to chemicals and how they evolved.

When the Supreme Court **struck down** Louisiana's law that you must teach creation science in addition to evolution science, Chief Justice Scalia dissented because he knew that the people of Louisiana deserve to teach evidence that doesn't support evolution.

Note: Scalia wanted more academic freedom and less of a monopoly on science. He wanted science to point out the pros and cons of multiple theories. Too bad Scalia was the minority voice! The tyranny of the majority shot down freedom. End note.

When scientists use the word evolution, they're trying to say an explanation of everything from the Big Bang to the present without allowing any role for a creator (intelligent designer).

Note: Evolution is multi-disciplinary, a spreading malicious cancer killing all truth. I remember a nature documentary about sharks started out saying something to the effect of, 'it seems evolution has made one of the greatest killers.' Indeed, evolution is a destroyer! And often, mass murderers use evolution as the excuse for their evil crimes against humanity. End note.

The Miller Yuri experiment was about taking several amino acids and attempting to spark them into a protein, but this is flawed for multiple reasons, one of which is they already started out with the amino acids.

An organism forming from prebiotic soup is about as unlikely as a tornado going through a junkyard making an airplane. These microorganisms are more complex than a spaceship, yet they say they were assembled by chance. No matter how much time you give, this is bizarre.

Maybe
Earth is old



Maybe it
randomly made life



Maybe species
learned how to crossbreed
past genetic limits



Humans must have
come from monkeys



imgflip.com

The prokaryotic bacterial cell is much more complex than a spaceship.

‘Chance assembly’ is another way of saying miracle.

Materialists (who dominate modern science) insist that there cannot be any supernatural element in the creation of life.

Note: No purpose is allowed, either. Jonathan Wells talks about the Smithsonian refusing to air a program on evolution that also suggested there may be some purpose in life. The evolutionists wildly protested the presentation and got it canceled. Nothing but complete atheistic secular humanism satisfies them. They must dominate all scientific discussion and ban anyone who violates their arbitrary definitions of what is and isn't ‘science.’ End note.

If life were so easy to make, it would have happened many times in many places.

A popular theory is that the first RNA synthesized itself from prebiotic soup without proteins. Though this is conceivable, it is not probable or experimentally verifiable. There are many creative theories about how the first life may have come into being, but none of them are experimentally verifiable.

Note: As Isaac Newton said, "A man may imagine things that are false, but he can only understand things that are true." The best scientists are those who demand experimental evidence and dismiss the rest as conjecture, as the pioneer scientists of the Enlightenment did. End note.

All theories are acceptable so long as none of them are creationism, in other words, an intelligent agent creating something; they don't allow God to be involved in creation at any level or in any way.

Note: What if God is actually how the creation happened? What if all the evidence points to God? How unscientific we become as we insist on these arbitrary parameters and exclude the Truth (God) that nature points to. End note.

Crick (one of the discoverers of DNA) and others recognize the extreme difficulty of creating life on Earth, especially within the parameters of time allotted, even though the time allotted is very long. These skeptical scientists speculate that life arrived here from some other place in space, microscopic life on an asteroid, or something. That would mean this life would have to travel through space safely and remain alive.

Crick says there may have been an extraterrestrial civilization that sent bacteria into space to start life on another planet.

Note: as I recall, even Richard Dawkins accepts the possibility that alien life forms could have placed early life here. These ideas are much closer to the truth than cosmic and chemical evolution. End note.

Critics of the extraterrestrial implant theory have issues with the invisibility of these extraterrestrials, but we are also working with invisible transitional hominid species.

When you must invoke invisible spacemen, it's time to admit that your theory of evolution doesn't work.

The Invisible Power Sustaining Creation (on Zero Point Energy) by Dr. Robert Wright

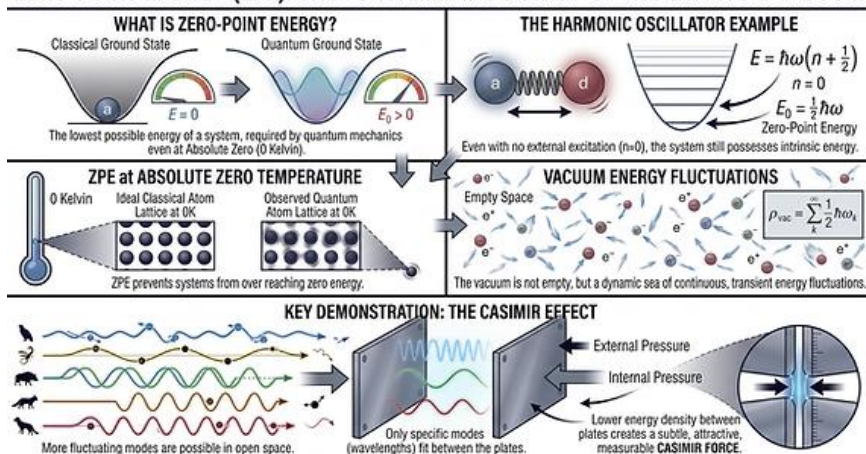
<https://www.afloodofhope.com/post/the-invisible-power-sustaining-creation>

Zero Point Energy: A Biblical Perspective

In our ongoing exploration of how the evidence all around us confirms the truth of God's Word, we often discover that the more scientists probe the

mysteries of the universe, the more clearly we see the hand of the Creator at work. One of the most fascinating discoveries in modern physics is something called zero point energy, or ZPE. This is the baseline energy present in the quantum vacuum, the very fabric of “empty” space itself, even at absolute zero temperature. Far from being nothing, the vacuum teems with fluctuating electromagnetic fields and virtual particles that pop in and out of existence. It is a vast, invisible ocean of energy that permeates every corner of the cosmos.

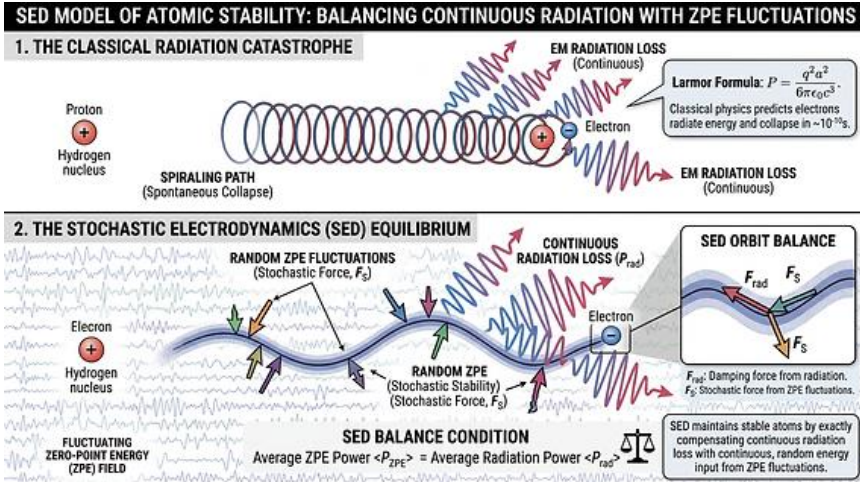
ZERO-POINT ENERGY (ZPE): THE FUNDAMENTAL ENERGY OF THE QUANTUM VACUUM



What makes ZPE so remarkable from a biblical viewpoint is not only its existence but its precise role in holding all matter together. Classical physics, before the insights of quantum mechanics, presented a serious problem for the stability of atoms. According to electromagnetic theory, an electron orbiting the nucleus of an atom should continuously radiate energy in the form of electromagnetic waves. Like a satellite losing altitude and spiraling inward, the electron would lose energy, slow down, and eventually collapse into the nucleus. If this happened, atoms would decay instantly, and with them, every structure in the universe; rocks, trees, our own bodies, would cease to exist. Matter itself would collapse.

Yet atoms do not collapse. Electrons remain in stable orbits. Why? The answer lies in zero point energy. In theories such as stochastic electrodynamics, the random fluctuations of the ZPE field constantly impart just the right amount of energy and momentum to the electron. These tiny impulses balance the energy the electron would otherwise radiate away, creating a dynamic equilibrium that keeps the atom from decaying. The ZPE provides exactly the stabilizing influence needed, neither too much nor too little, to prevent the collapse of electrons and, therefore, the collapse of all matter. Without this pervasive energy sea filling every cubic centimeter of

space, the universe as we know it could not exist for even a fraction of a second.



This scientific reality echoes powerfully through the pages of Scripture. The Bible reveals that it is not an impersonal quantum field, but the living God Himself who upholds and sustains His creation moment by moment. Consider Colossians 1:17: “And he is before all things, and by him all things consist” (or “hold together,” as some translations render it). The Apostle Paul, writing under the inspiration of the Holy Spirit, declares that in Christ “all things hold together.” Every atom, every electron orbit, every fluctuation in the vacuum is under His sovereign control.

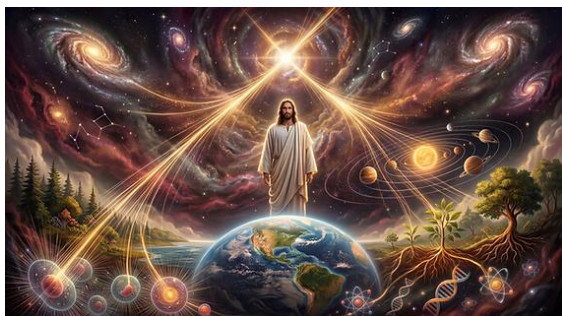
Even more directly, Hebrews 1:3 tells us that the Son is “the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power.” The same powerful word that spoke the universe into existence in Genesis 1 continues to sustain it. What scientists describe as zero point energy—the foundational energy preventing atomic collapse—appears to be a physical manifestation of the sustaining “light” and power of Christ that fills all space.

The Gospel of John opens with this profound connection: “In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God... In him was life; and the life was the light of men. And the light shineth in darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not... That was the true Light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world” (John 1:1, 4-5, 9). Christ is not only the Creator; He is the Light that enlightens and sustains every part of creation. Just as ZPE is omnipresent, filling the vacuum between the stars and within every atom, the Light of Christ permeates all things, giving life and

order to the universe. It is the invisible power by which “we live, and move, and have our being” (Acts 17:28).

When God said, “Let there be light” on the first day of creation (Genesis 1:3), He was not merely introducing visible light to a formless void. He was establishing the foundational energy and order that would govern all physical reality. That same sustaining light continues to prevent the collapse of the very atoms that make up our world. The precision of zero point energy is no cosmic accident; it is the fingerprint of an all-wise, all-powerful Creator who designed the universe to declare His glory.

In a world that often feels like it is spinning toward chaos and collapse, this truth brings a flood of hope. The same Christ who stabilizes the quantum vacuum is the Savior who offers stability to our lives. He who upholds all things by the word of His power is the One who conquered death and offers eternal life to all who trust in Him. As we stand in awe of the scientific evidence confirming that an invisible, all-pervading energy keeps matter from collapsing, let us remember the greater spiritual reality: Jesus Christ is the Light of the world, and in Him we find not only the explanation for the universe’s existence but the sure hope of our own salvation.



The evidence is all around us, if only we have eyes to see. From the tiniest fluctuations in the quantum vacuum to the vast expanse of the heavens, God’s Word is being confirmed. I hope this discovery strengthens your faith and points you ever more clearly to the One in whom “all things hold together.” There is hope, abundant, overflowing hope, because the Light of Christ sustains it all.

The Moon: A Faithful Witness in the Heavens by

Dr. Robert Wright

<https://www.afloodofhope.com/post/the-moon-a-faithful-witness-in-the-heavens>

Testifying to Our Creator’s Perfect Design

In the quiet of a starlit night, as the silvery glow of the moon bathes the earth in gentle light, one cannot help but feel a profound sense of awe. Far from a random accident of cosmic chance, the moon stands as a brilliant testimony to the God of the Bible. He is the same Creator who spoke the universe into existence and declared it “very good.” We rejoice in how the Genesis Flood and the biblical account of creation reveal God’s power, judgment, and redemptive love. Today, let’s turn our eyes upward to the moon and discover how this lesser light proclaims the glory of its Maker.



Earthset captured through the Orion spacecraft window during the Artemis II crew’s flyby of the moon. The dark portion of Earth is experiencing nighttime. On Earth’s day side, swirling clouds are visible over Australia and Oceania. In the foreground, Ohm crater on the moon has terraced edges and a flat floor interrupted by central peaks. (NASA)

The Moon’s Creation: Part of a “Very Good” World

On the fourth day of creation, God brought order to the heavens. Genesis 1:14-19 declares: “And God said, Let there be lights in the firmament of the heaven to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs, and for seasons, and for days, and years: And let them be for lights in the firmament of the heaven to give light upon the earth: and it was so. And God made two great lights; the greater light to rule the day, and the lesser light to rule the night: he made the stars also. ... And God saw that it was good.”

The moon was no afterthought. Created alongside the sun and stars, it was purposefully designed to govern the night, mark the rhythms of time, and serve as a sign. God did not merely fling celestial bodies into space. He crafted them with precision for humanity's benefit. The moon's role helped establish the cycles of seasons, days, and years that sustain life on Earth. When God looked upon His handiwork and proclaimed it "good," the moon was included in that divine approval. In a world still echoing with the goodness of creation, the moon reflected the Creator's wisdom. It provided light in darkness and order in the cosmos.

This was not the product of billions of years of chaotic evolution. It was the intentional act of a loving God who prepared a habitable home for His image-bearers.



The Artemis II crew captured a new image of the far side of the moon on Day 4 (April 4, 2026) of their lunar flight.

Symbolism of the Moon in the Bible and Ancient Israel

In Scripture and the life of Ancient Israel, the moon carried rich symbolic meaning. It always pointed back to the faithfulness of God.

The Hebrew word for "month" (*chodesh*) comes from the root meaning "new" or "renewed." It is directly tied to the moon's monthly cycle of waxing and waning. In Ancient Israel, the sighting of the new moon (Rosh Chodesh) marked the beginning of each month. It was a time of celebration, worship, and sacrifice (Numbers 10:10; Psalm 81:3). It reminded God's people of renewal, fresh starts, and the Creator's sustaining power.

Jewish tradition viewed the moon as an emblem of Israel itself. Like the moon, which wanes and seems to disappear but always returns to fullness, Israel endures persecution and trial yet is preserved by God's hand. The moon, due to its monthly reappearance, is considered as the emblem of Israel. The latter, like the moon, undergoes several phases through persecution without being destroyed.

The moon also symbolizes beauty, faithfulness, and divine order. Song of Solomon 6:10 poetically asks, “Who is she that looketh forth as the morning, fair as the moon?” Psalm 89:37 compares the enduring Davidic throne to “the moon, which shall be established for ever.” It reflects God’s light (never producing its own, but faithfully mirroring the sun), just as believers are called to reflect the light of Christ in a dark world.

In contrast to pagan cultures that worshipped the moon as a deity, Israel saw it as a created servant. It testifies to the one true God who rules over all.

What the Prophets Said About the Moon

The prophets of Israel frequently pointed to the moon as evidence of God’s unchanging sovereignty and as a sign of His future plans.

Jeremiah 31:35-36 affirms God’s covenant faithfulness: “Thus saith the LORD, which giveth the sun for a light by day, and the ordinances of the moon and of the stars for a light by night. ... If those ordinances depart from before me, saith the LORD, then the seed of Israel also shall cease from being a nation before me for ever.” The moon’s reliable cycles prove God’s promises are just as steadfast.

The phrase “the ordinances of the moon” refers to the fixed laws, statutes, and appointed cycles that God established for the moon at creation. These ordinances include the moon’s precise, unchanging monthly phases, from the slender new moon crescent to the bright full moon and back, its regular orbit around the Earth, and its dependable rising and setting. The Hebrew word translated “ordinances” speaks of decrees or fixed orders that never vary. As long as these heavenly rules remain in place, God’s promises to His people stand firm.

These divine ordinances of the moon became the foundation of the biblical calendar in Ancient Israel. The Hebrew calendar is lunar-based, with each new month beginning at the sighting of the new moon, (Rosh Chodesh). This lunar calendar determined the exact timing of all the feasts and fasts that God commanded Israel to observe in Leviticus 23. The Passover and Feast of Unleavened Bread were kept at the full moon of the first month (Nisan). The Feast of Tabernacles occurred at the full moon of the seventh month. The Feast of Trumpets was sounded on the new moon of the seventh month. These God-appointed times were far more than cultural events. They served as beautiful prophetic shadows pointing to the Messiah, Jesus Christ, and the stages of God’s great plan of redemption for humanity.

Isaiah foresaw a day of restored glory: “Moreover the light of the moon shall be as the light of the sun” (Isaiah 30:26), pointing to the coming Kingdom where creation itself will be redeemed.

The Moon in End-Times Eschatology

In biblical prophecy concerning the last days, the moon takes on profound eschatological significance as a heavenly sign of coming judgment and redemption. Jesus warned in Matthew 24:29 that “immediately after the tribulation of those days shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light.” Luke 21:25 speaks of “signs in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars” that will precede the return of the Son of Man in power and glory. The prophet Joel declared, “The sun shall be turned into darkness, and the moon into blood, before the great and the terrible day of the LORD come” (Joel 2:31; see also Acts 2:20). This is dramatically fulfilled in Revelation 6:12 during the opening of the sixth seal: “the sun became black as sackcloth of hair, and the moon became as blood.”

These celestial signs, often linked to lunar eclipses (blood moons) and solar darkenings, serve as divine warnings during the Great Tribulation. They herald the approach of the Day of the Lord, the outpouring of God’s wrath, and the imminent Second Coming of Christ. In the context of end-times eschatology, the moon does not merely mark time; it declares the urgency of repentance and the certainty of God’s sovereign plan. As we witness these signs in the heavens, Scripture calls believers to “look up, and lift up your heads; for your redemption draweth nigh” (Luke 21:28).

Even the psalmists, often prophetic in voice, invite all creation to praise: “Praise him, sun and moon: praise him, all ye stars of light” (Psalm 148:3). The moon, in every phase, calls us to worship the Creator rather than the creation.

The Miracle of the Moon’s Size, Orbit, and Role in Making Earth Habitable

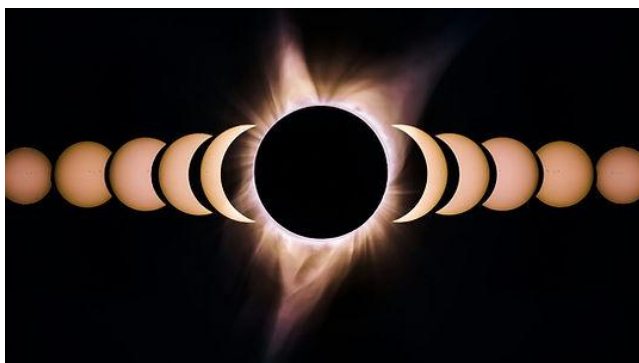
Modern science only deepens our wonder. The moon is no ordinary satellite. It is precisely tuned for life on Earth in ways that defy naturalistic explanation.

Consider its size and distance: The moon is about one-fourth the diameter of Earth and sits at the perfect orbital distance. This creates a gravitational pull that generates tides. These tides are not too weak to stagnate our oceans, and not so strong as to flood the continents destructively. These tides circulate

nutrients, oxygenate waters, and support marine life essential to the food chain.

The moon also stabilizes Earth's axial tilt. Without this, our planet would wobble wildly, causing extreme climate swings that would make life impossible. Seasons would be chaotic; weather patterns unpredictable. The moon's nearly circular orbit and synchronized rotation (always showing the same face to Earth) ensure this stabilizing effect endures.

Remarkably, the moon's exact size and position relative to both the Earth and the sun make possible the phenomenon of perfect total solar eclipses. The sun is approximately 400 times larger than the moon, yet it is also about 400 times farther away. This precise ratio causes the moon to appear almost exactly the same size as the sun in our sky, allowing it to completely cover the sun's disk during an eclipse and reveal the sun's corona in a breathtaking display. Such eclipses are unique to Earth and speak of intricate, intentional design by the Creator who formed the earth "to be inhabited" (Isaiah 45:18).



The Great Eclipse of 2024

Even as NASA's Artemis II mission, launched on April 1, 2026, with four astronauts aboard the Orion spacecraft, conducts its historic crewed flight around the moon (the first since Apollo), humanity continues to explore the very heavens that declare God's glory. These features were established at creation and preserved through the global cataclysm. The moon testifies that our planet was specially prepared. It is not the result of chance collisions over eons, but the handiwork of a God who provides "enough and to spare."

A Call to Hope in the Creator

As you gaze at the moon tonight, remember: it is more than rock and dust. It is a faithful witness, a symbol of renewal, and a scientific marvel declaring,

“The heavens declare the glory of God; and the firmament sheweth his handywork” (Psalm 19:1).

In a world flooded with evolutionary myths that diminish the Creator, the moon lifts our eyes to biblical truth. Just as the new moon heralds fresh beginnings, so does the Gospel offer new life through Jesus Christ. The same God who placed the moon in the sky loves you and invites you to return to Him. As we see increasing signs in the heavens, look up, for our redemption draws near.

Ancient Calendar Keeping by Dr. Robert Wright

<https://www.afloodofhope.com/post/ancient-calendar-keeping>

(This is a continuation of the discussion introducing a theory developed by Dr. Wright.)

The 360-Day Year, Its Shift, the 7-Day Week, and God’s Sovereign Timekeeping

Ancient civilizations around the world used calendars that were remarkably similar in structure. Many were based on a 360-day year divided into 12 months of exactly 30 days each. This system appears in Babylonian, Assyrian, Persian, early Egyptian, Hindu, and even some Armenian and [Mesoamerican](#) records. The prevalence of the 360-day year was widespread and long-lasting. It appears in administrative, astronomical, and religious texts from the third millennium BC onward. Many early calendars treated the year as 12 times 30 equals 360 days, with occasional additions of extra days (epagomenal or intercalary) to approximate the solar year.



In our model, this 360-day year was the original pre-Flood calendar brought through the Flood by Noah’s family. Genesis records that the Flood began on the 17th day of the second month and ended with the ark resting on the 17th day of the seventh month. This span is exactly five months, or 150 days, which is consistent with 30-day months in a 360-day framework. Noah’s descendants carried this system outward after the Flood. The concepts later appeared in Mesopotamian cultures through adoption or corruption of the original framework preserved from Noah’s line.



Mesopotamian 360-day Calendar

The transition to a 365-day (or 365.25-day) year was not gradual in the biblical timeline. It was a direct consequence of the Rahab destruction and associated angular-momentum transfer during the Flood year (approximately 2348 BC). The close gravitational flyby and debris-swarm impacts slowed

Earth's rotation and slightly lengthened the orbital period. This produced the practical lengthening of the year described earlier in the model. Pre-event calendars operated on roughly 360 days. Afterward, longer days and a slightly larger orbit shifted the calendar to approximately 365 days. This change was abrupt on the biblical timescale. It occurred within the Flood year and immediate post-Flood stabilization (Genesis 8:22) rather than over centuries. Secular records show some cultures retaining 360-day administrative or cultic calendars long after the solar year lengthened. They added five epagomenal days at year's end (as in Egypt) or inserted intercalary months irregularly. The shift was noticeable and required calendar adjustments, but the core 360-day structure persisted in religious or idealized contexts for generations.

Relation to Months and Flood Significance in Month Names

The 360-day year aligned perfectly with 12 months of 30 days each. This made the lunar month and the civil month coincide exactly in the pre-Flood and immediate post-Flood system. After the Rahab-induced lengthening, months no longer matched the lunar cycle as neatly. This led to the need for intercalation (extra days or months) to keep seasons aligned. This explains the practical challenges ancient peoples faced in synchronizing lunar observations with the solar year.

Month names themselves carry indirect Flood connections through the Rahab events. The names used in the Hebrew calendar (and later by Babylonians) originated with Noah's descendants after the Flood. For example, the name "Bul" (later Marcheshvan or Cheshvan) has been linked etymologically to concepts of "flooding" or "rainy season" (related to the Hebrew *mabul*, the word for Noah's Flood). While the original pre-Flood names are not preserved, the post-Flood nomenclature carried by Noah's descendants was later adopted or corrupted by Babylonian and Mesopotamian cultures. This preserved echoes of the cataclysmic events triggered by Rahab's destruction and the fountains of the great deep.

The 7-Day Week: A Uniquely Biblical Institution Carried Through the Flood

The 7-day week has no natural astronomical basis. Unlike the day (Earth's rotation), the month (lunar cycle), or the year (Earth's orbit), there is no celestial rhythm that divides neatly into seven equal parts. The Moon's phases approximate 29.5 days (roughly four 7-day periods plus a fraction), but this is inexact and does not explain the universal persistence of a strict 7-day cycle across cultures.

The only rational explanation for the 7-day week is the biblical creation account. Genesis 1-2 records God creating in six days and resting on the seventh. This established the week as a fundamental rhythm of time and a covenant sign between God and humanity (Exodus 20:8-11; 31:16-17). This divine institution was carried through the Flood by Noah and his family. As Noah's descendants dispersed from Babel (Genesis 11), they carried the 7-day week, established at creation and preserved through the Flood, into Mesopotamia. It appears in early Babylonian and Sumerian records as a recurring cycle of rest or religious observance every seventh day. This had been adopted or corrupted from the original biblical institution brought by Noah's family. The week's persistence worldwide, despite no practical or astronomical necessity, is therefore a remnant of the original creation order preserved through the Flood. No other ancient culture independently invented a 7-day week with the same consistency and cultural weight. Its presence in Mesopotamia is best explained as a legacy from Noah rather than coincidental invention.

Note: In the French Revolution, the godless leaders tried doing away with Christianity, and they instituted a 10-day week so there would be no Sabbath. Thankfully their movement didn't stick. End note.

God's Sovereign Timekeeping

This model beautifully supports the biblical picture of God's deliberate timekeeping and planning. The original 360-day year reflected a harmonious, "very good" creation on Day 4 (Genesis 1:14-19). The Rahab disruption and Flood events sovereignly adjusted Earth's rotation and orbit. This produced the post-Flood 365-day year while preserving the 7-day week as an unchanging covenant marker. The Titius-Bode spacing that positioned Rahab perfectly in the asteroid-belt gap further illustrates purposeful design. The resulting calendar shifts serve as ongoing reminders of creation, curse, judgment, and restoration. In this way, the Rahab events affirm that time itself is under God's control. This ranges from the precise 7-day rhythm established at creation, through the Flood-timed lengthening of the year, to the stabilized seasons promised afterward (Genesis 8:22). The ancient calendars and their echoes of the 360-day system are not random. They are testimonies to the accuracy of the biblical timeline and the faithfulness of the Creator who numbers our days (Psalm 90:12; Colossians 1:17).

A Pre-Flood Earth without Axial Tilt? By Dr. Robert Wright

<https://www.afloodofhope.com/post/a-pre-flood-earth-without-axial-tilt>

(This is a continuation of the discussion introducing a theory developed by Dr. Wright.)

Analysis of Evidence for a Pre-Flood Earth without Axial Tilt

Our proposed model already incorporates a rapid change in Earth's axial tilt (obliquity) during the Flood year through asymmetric debris impacts from the Rahab swarm, true polar wander (TPW), or a sudden obliquity shift. This raises the natural question: is there evidence that Earth originally had little or no axial tilt (near 0°) before the Rahab meteorite events at the time of the Flood?

Biblical Considerations

Genesis 1:14 states that God created the sun, moon, and stars “for signs and for seasons, and for days and years.” The Hebrew word for “seasons” (*moed*) primarily means appointed times or festivals rather than climatic seasons, so it does not require a 23.4° tilt from the beginning. On the other hand, Genesis 8:22 records God's post-Flood promise: “While the earth remains, seedtime and harvest, cold and heat, summer and winter, day and night, shall not cease.” Some interpreters see this as the formal establishment of pronounced seasonal variation after the Flood, suggesting a more uniform pre-Flood climate with minimal tilt. This reading is circumstantial but consistent with the Rahab timeline: a low-tilt Earth before the Flood would have produced milder, more equatorial-like conditions globally, fitting the long pre-Flood lifespans and the overall “very good” creation (Genesis 1:31).

Scientific and Creationist Evidence

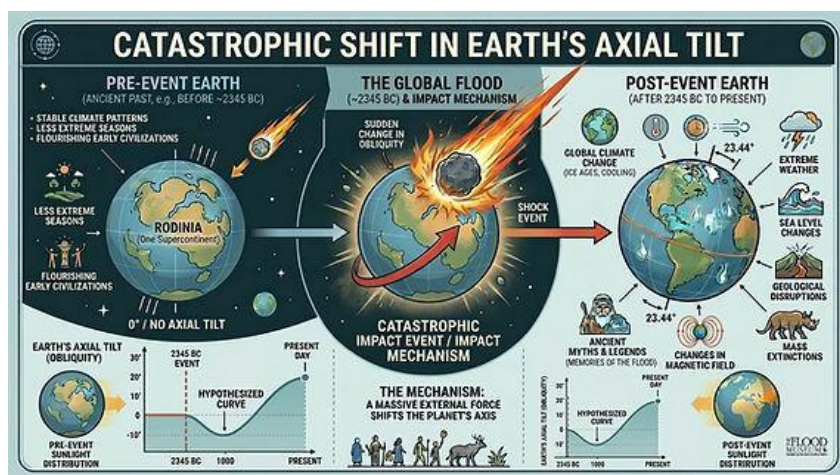
Direct empirical evidence for a pre-Flood zero or near-zero axial tilt is lacking, largely because the Flood itself is understood to have erased or deeply buried most pre-Flood surface features. Paleomagnetic and paleoclimate data are ambiguous and must be reinterpreted within the biblical framework.

- **Paleoclimate proxies:** Fossil evidence of widespread tropical or subtropical vegetation in what are now polar regions (e.g., coal seams in Antarctica, palm-like plants in high latitudes) supported a more

uniform pre-Flood climate. A near-zero tilt would eliminate strong seasonal contrasts and produce relatively even temperatures worldwide, consistent with these finds when they are attributed to pre-Flood conditions rather than Flood-deposited material.

- **The Dodwell hypothesis:** In the 1930s–1950s, astronomer George Dodwell analyzed ancient gnomon (sundial) and solstice observations from Egypt, Babylonia, and elsewhere. He concluded that the obliquity of the ecliptic showed a systematic deviation from modern formulas, best explained by a sudden catastrophic shift in Earth's axial tilt around 2345 BC (very close to traditional Flood dates). Dodwell proposed the Earth was nearly upright before this event and gradually recovered to the present 23.4° . While this hypothesis is a minority view even among creationists and has been critiqued for data selection and modeling assumptions, it remains one of the few quantitative attempts to link ancient astronomical records to a Flood-era tilt change.

In short, there is no conclusive “smoking gun” geological or astronomical proof of zero pre-Flood tilt. The evidence remains circumstantial and interpretive, relying on climate proxies and selective ancient observations.



Consistency with Our Model

Our theory is fully compatible with a pre-Flood Earth that had little or no axial tilt. A near-vertical axis would explain a more uniform global climate before the Flood, while the asymmetric impacts and mass redistribution from the Rahab debris swarm during the Flood year provide the exact physical mechanism needed for a rapid TPW or obliquity shift to the present 23.4° . This change would have been sudden on the biblical timescale (within the

Flood year plus immediate post-Flood recovery) and would have introduced the strong seasonal contrasts promised in Genesis 8:22. The same event that slowed Earth's rotation and lengthened the year could simultaneously have reoriented the spin axis, unifying the rotational, orbital, and climatic changes under one sovereign cataclysm.

While direct evidence is limited, the Rahab model offers a coherent physical explanation for a pre-Flood low-tilt Earth that was dramatically altered by the very meteorite swarm that delivered the asteroid belt and triggered the Flood. This scenario harmonizes biblical clues about pre- and post-Flood conditions, ancient astronomical records, and the observable cratering and isotopic patterns across the solar system without requiring deep time or uniformitarian assumptions. The scarred planets and moons serve as visible reminders of the same brief, intense events that reshaped Earth's climate and calendar under God's sovereign control (Colossians 1:17).

Rending the Veil Between Science & Religion

Further unlock Christ's atonement by tuning in to doctrines of the creation, and wondrous scientific discoveries that vindicate the word of God. Salvation was on Noah's ark, so let's start believing in the flood again. Let's believe, and be saved! Let us embark on a latter-day ark of truth, and be set free!

Too long have we toyed with the evolutionists and their atheistic theory. Too long have we allowed them to inject their 'old Earth' and ape-man into our Bibles and classrooms. But no longer! Christ is the weapon to win this war. Let us return to the word of God, and honest measurement of our surroundings which He has made.

Teams of scientists around the world are standing up to the intolerant dogma of evolution. Brilliant minds everywhere are exposing the centuries of lies that have found their way into our children's textbooks.

In this volume, we will sample ideas from many brilliant creationists who have remained faithful to the word of God, showcasing revelations from God and nature about the true Biblical age of the Earth and their implications for the origin of man. No time to evolve, no ape-man. From Lyle and Hutton to Darwin, Hawking, and Dawkins, we have seen enough of the evils that come from taking lightly the word of God, twisting it to our whim and pleasure.

Topics: Geological Revelations on Radiometric Dating, Dinosaurs, Rock Layers, Noah's Flood, & The Cosmos.

In addition to providing fascinating essays and quotations, this volume highlights and analyzes many scientists who challenge evolution's claims, such as Morris, Behe, Meyer, Wells, and others.

Those armed with the truth, both in science and doctrine, can see that evolution theory is outdated, and on its way out! It was a silly idea anyway!